

PRIVATE

19. During every summer holiday we went away to an RAF base in Ballyhornan which was given to the nuns for the children. We stayed in huts. On a Saturday we were given a bar of red soap and told to go into the sea and get washed. I don't think there was any kind of baths then.
20. I left Nazareth Lodge on 20th August 1968 when I was eleven years old.

Rubane House, Kircubbin (20/8/68 – 28/11/72)

21. Once we turned eleven we were taken in groups of about ten or twelve boys in a minibus to Rubane. I was taken on 20th August 1968. It happened very quickly and there was no preparation.
22. I recall on my arrival I was made to take a shower with the other new arrivals and it was [REDACTED] who supervised us. He gave us all a pep talk and we were warned we better toe the line or else.
23. We were put in dormitories in the main house when we arrived. The chalets were being built and they opened in 1969. When the chalets opened there were fourteen boys allocated to each chalet along with a house mother and house father. There were three bedrooms with three or four boys in each bedroom and then there was a bedroom for the oldest boy and the parent's quarters was through another door. It was good to get into somewhere which was nice and new.
24. I was in Chalet One and my houseparents were [REDACTED] and [REDACTED]. It was good at the beginning. Then [REDACTED] turned out to be abusive. I don't think [REDACTED] knew much about it at the time but she was quite strict and bullied you. We were actually terrified of them. She was like a prison guard as she was strict. I wanted to keep on the right side of her otherwise she would have slapped me. There was no family atmosphere in our chalet.

PRIVATE

back to Nazareth Lodge. This was in 1973. We were in court twice at this time. We were split up again as a family and this was actually the last time we were together as a family. I was taken to the top floor and the nun was called Sister **SR 47**. She left Nazareth Lodge and was replaced by **SR 153** who went to Derry. Then she was replaced by **SR 30** from South Africa. She was strict and very religious. I laughed at another boy **DL 20** who made faces and she sent us to our bedroom and put me to bed with no food (psychological). I remember on one occasion she slapped me on the face from behind, knocking me into the wardrobe. She had slapped me from behind. This was for no reason at all a bad tempered woman. Another time she gave me a beating for swapping an alter duty with another boy called **DL 55** he told me to do it. **DL 31** his brother were the two boys supposed to do it. She beat me with her hands. And cut my hair to humiliate me. I had chores to do every morning which progressed onto me doing the front door parlour. I work full time outside of school. This involved contacting the nuns when someone called at the door or someone rang. Brushing the grounds, feeding beggars, seeing to priests and much more until 10 o'clock every night when I locked the gates. I did this for around a couple of years. It was whilst doing this job that I would have met visiting priests who would sometimes have stayed over in the bedroom to the right of the door as you enter. I took over the job from **NL 55**. It was here that I first met Father Brendan Smyth. I was about 10 ½ years old at this time. Within 5 minutes he abused me. I remember him coming to the door. I carried some items from his car. When he opened the boot of his car I could see sweets and money, both paper and coins in a pile, stacked. I took items for him into his bedroom and he had given me a pile of sweets. As I was eating the sweets he proceeded to be affectionate to me. He stood behind me and put his hands on my backside and my bum and privates when he played with me. He had his hands inside my clothing. This type of abuse took place on several visits from Brendan Smyth. Father Brendan Smyth was like a Santa Claus figure. It was the first time I had been shown any affection from a Priest. He was not violent in any way. All the kids liked him, he gave us money and sweets. The abuse from Brendan Smyth progressed, on other occasions he took his penis out and had me fondle him. He done the same to me. This was at the front

HIA REF:

• Witness Name:

THE INQUIRY INTO HISTORICAL INSTITUTIONAL ABUSE 1922 – 1995

WITNESS STATEMENT OF SR 30

1. I have been asked to comment on allegations made against me by HIA 41 in a statement given to the Inquiry.
2. I was in fact with a group of children in Nazareth Lodge from 1974 to 1980 and also as a teacher at St Michael's Primary School. In that regard only HIA 41 recollection of me is accurate. I did attend Jordonstown one evening a week. [REDACTED] did not take over the unit until after I had left in 1980.
3. It is possible that the description of HIA 41 being put to bed in paragraph 16 on page SNB-440 is accurate. Sending children to their room or to another room to calm down would have been a common practice to try to diffuse situations and to keep order without engaging in rows with the children. This did not mean that HIA 41 would have missed out on meals nor would he have been left there for the rest of the day or night. That would not have happened.
4. I do not accept that I slapped him from behind. I am not and would not describe myself as being a bad tempered woman nor have I ever been so described by others. HIA 41 said in the course of conversation with me that I had hit him once, to which I replied that I had no recollection of doing so but I apologised if it had happened. He said that he was glad to hear that. His original version of the episode was that he and 3 or 4 other boys were 'messaging around' in the bathroom and while I was chastising them he burst out laughing and I slapped him across the face. He said that he was laughing at another boy and that I thought he was laughing at me. The same incident has been reported in other media with the narrative changing and taking on a more aggressive portrayal of the incident on each occasion. I have absolutely no recollection of ever having done so.
5. I note that HIA 41 describes that on one occasion I beat him and cut his hair as a punishment. That most certainly did not happen under any circumstances whatsoever.
6. The description of the chores that HIA 41 would have carried out is factually incorrect. The children did help out around the unit with duties such as helping with the dishes, tidying the tables, dusting, polishing and chores such as this. While janitorial duties around the outside of the house would have been carried out by adult staff, HIA 41 did help with tasks such as answering the door/phone and handing out sandwiches through a hatch to poor people between 4.00 and 6.00pm – activities which were normal and which he appeared to enjoy.
7. The children did go out at weekends to stay with families. These were families who wanted to assist by giving children a sense of a normal life. Retrospectively we now know that some of these families mistreated the children but the vast majority were loving charitable people who genuinely desired to help children in care.

CHILDREN - IN RESIDENTIAL CARE3 - WEEKLY REVIEW

L.C.

Name of Child: HIA 41 Date of Birth:

Home Address: Care Address: Desareth Lodge.

Division: South School attended/Employment: St. Augustine's Sec. S.

Date of Admission to Care: 6.6.75 Section under which admitted: 95

Reason for admission (be specific): Home conditions were very unsatisfactory
and Belfast Juvenile Court granted a P.P.O. on 5.7.75 following an application by Belfast
Welfare Department for same.

How accommodated during period in care:

Place	Period
Convent of Mary, Bally.	6.6.75 - 20.9.75
Desareth Lodge	20.9.75 - present.

Report

Dates of visits to child: 27.6.76 4.10.76

Dates of Interviews with Parents: 6.7.76 4.9.76 17.9.76 27.9.76

Sunny, who is in a different group at Desareth than his brother and sister, spent the
month of August at Ballyhormon, he also enjoyed this holiday.

It was suggested to Sunny that he could spend some weekends at Kircubbin with his
brother Stephen, but the two boys do not have a close relationship and Sunny was not
keen to do this.

Sunny is still rather reluctant to go home on Sundays to his mother, but prefers to
stay at Desareth, where he receives a small amount of pocket money for acting as
'doorman' and answering the telephone.

Social Worker: NL 187 A.P.S.W.:

Principal Social Worker: Date: 7.10.76

*Delete whichever is inapplicable

HIA REF: []

NAME: NL 187

DATE 27th March 2015**THE INQUIRY INTO HISTORICAL INSTITUTIONAL ABUSE 1922 TO 1995**

Witness Statement of NL 187

I, NL 187 will say as follows: -

1. I am a social worker currently employed by the Belfast Health and Social Care Trust. I commenced as a trainee social worker with the Belfast Welfare Department in December 1972 and then completed the Certificate of Qualification in Social Work between September 1973 and June 1975. I took up a post as a qualified social worker with the Eastern Health and Social Board in September 1975. I was the social worker for HIA 41 and his family from October 1975 until August 1977.
2. During this time I visited the Applicant and his younger siblings in Nazareth Lodge monthly. I also visited their mother, HIA 41 on a regular basis. Social Services records indicate that for most of this time the Applicant was settled in Nazareth Lodge and was visited regularly by his mother. He preferred to stay in the unit rather than visit her at home, see exhibit one containing three monthly reviews. The Applicant received a small amount of money for answering the telephone and acting as doorman, see exhibit two.
3. At a case conference in March 1976 in Nazareth Lodge the Applicant's move to Rubane was discussed but was considered to be inappropriate as he did not wish

HIA Ref - NL5

Name [REDACTED]

Date

THE INQUIRY INTO HISTORICAL INSTITUTIONAL ABUSE 1922 TO 1995

Witness Statement of [REDACTED] – NL5

1. My full name is [REDACTED] and I have just recently celebrated my 89th birthday and until recently my health was excellent. Since hearing of the allegations made by a number of former residents I have been very stressed and my blood pressure is very high. I also feel unsteady on my feet a lot of the time.
2. My health has deteriorated requiring medical attention since the start of this and hearing all the lies that have been told about me and I have found it so stressful to hear that additional allegations were made orally. I do not feel this is fair unless I have an opportunity to reply and I am not even sure now if I will be fit to attend the hearing to defend myself and my reputation in person
3. I have provided a statement dated the 12th January to this Inquiry and have been asked to comment on the allegations made against me by two additional boys
4. My Solicitor has indicated that this is hopefully going to be over soon and that I can provide a final statement once all the evidence is over because I also wish to comment on the evidence given orally to the Inquiry by the boys I mentioned in my original statement but I understand that this statement is required urgently to address allegations made by that will be heard on the afternoon of Monday 26th,

[REDACTED] **HIA 41**

5. This boy was not in my group and by his statement he indicates that he was in Sr [REDACTED] SR 30 group. I would have had very little to do with him
6. I have not met [REDACTED] HIA 41 since he left Nazareth.
7. In my opinion his description of his time is pure fantasy. No child ever answered the phone or the door or was in charge of the Parlour. This was my job.

PRIVATE

complain. I didn't know how to complain and there would have been no-one to complain to. You would have suffered the consequences if you complained.

7. The education was bad. They didn't treat you well because they thought we were orphans and wouldn't get anywhere in life anyway. They were right. Without an education you can't get anywhere and you end up in low paid jobs and it's hard to sell yourself. I never had the opportunity to educate myself when I was older as I could not afford to.
8. The routine was to get up, go to school, come back for dinner, then up to the dormitory and in to bed for 6pm, even in the summer. There was very little food. It was mainly dipped bread. We were forced to go to mass and we had chores to do which was usually polishing the floors in the hall. There was little opportunity to play. We had chores to do every day which included cleaning the bathroom and the corridors. There was no affection or warmth from the nuns.
SR 34 would have threatened to give us six of the best if we cried.
9. I had very little family contact. I never saw my mother after I was put in care. I have no memories of my father. I wasn't allowed to go and see my sisters even though Nazareth House was located close to the Lodge. My older brother, NL 133 was in Nazareth Lodge with me until he was adopted when he was eight or nine by people from Randalstown. I haven't seen him since he was adopted. I don't even remember getting to say goodbye to him. I have always missed him terribly as he was a protector to me when we were in Nazareth Lodge. Although I did not see him very often when we were in the home as we were in different groups it was comforting just to know he was there. When he left I was on my own.
10. I was allowed to visit my granny and aunt [REDACTED] both on my mother's side, in [REDACTED] in Scotland for about six weeks in the summer. My granny came over on the boat and collected us. When I returned the nuns would fire questions at me like "did you go to mass?". I said I did and they asked "what was the priest like?". When I tried to describe him they said "no, that was the

PRIVATE

minister, you're not going back again". After that they stopped me from going to Scotland for a year because I wasn't being taken to the Roman Catholic Church.

11. My Aunt told me they wanted to adopt me but my mother wouldn't give permission. I would have been happy there and had a great start in life and had a family bond. It broke both our hearts when I had to go back. The only good memories I have of my time in care are my holidays to Scotland.
12. That is all the memories I have of Nazareth Lodge. I'd say there are a lot of other things that happened but I have blanked a lot of things out. The emotional and physical punishment has stayed with me.

De La Salle Boys' Home, Rubane House, Kircubbin (20/08/1968 – 25/06/1972)

13. I left Nazareth Lodge and went to Rubane House in Kircubbin on 20th August 1968 when I was eleven years old. I was only given a couple of hours notice. I was taken there in a minibus driven by either **BR 6** or Brother **BR 2** with about twelve other boys from Nazareth Lodge.
14. When I arrived there I was initially put in a dormitory in the big house with twenty to thirty beds in it. After a while I was moved to a chalet. I was moved to Chalet 1 under **BR 13**, **DL 134** and **DL 135**. It was regimental with the **DL 134, DL 135**. She was a very bad tempered woman and he was a bully. Brother **BR 13** was nice. I have no complaint about him. I think he was afraid of **DL 134**. **DL 134** I think there were fourteen of us in that Chalet. I had one of two single rooms and the rest were divided into three dormitories with four beds each. When I was in my single room there were always boys coming in and exposing themselves to me. It went no further than that. They were probably interfered with and thought it was normal.
15. I was sexually abused by **DL 134** on one occasion. We were being taught the accordion by a man called **DL 134**. I can't remember his surname. **DL 134** collected him and left him home. I remember **DL 134** taking me with him once to leave **DL 134** home and on the way back in the car he made me

1 Q. At the time you just took what you were given.

2 **A. I didn't feel hungry. I got by.**

3 Q. You do talk about one incident, though, where you were
4 made to eat all of the meal, including a rotten potato,
5 by SR118, and you said that you did that because you
6 were frightened of what might have happened if you
7 didn't eat up.

8 **A. Yes, and I might have felt that was an exception,**
9 **because I was the only one that left something on the**
10 **plate.**

11 Q. I think you said that your view was this particular nun
12 picked on you for some reason.

13 **A. Yes, I always had that feeling, yes.**

14 Q. Just one of the things that the congregation would say
15 was that the food that they provided was essentially the
16 best that they could and you would accept that I take
17 it.

18 **A. I would indeed, yes.**

19 Q. And that they would also say that nobody was force fed
20 in any way.

21 **A. No, no.**

22 Q. You do have good memories, and you talk about these in
23 your statement. You talk about Christmas at
24 paragraph 10 there. You looked forward to Christmas,
25 because it was a time when you felt comfortable in the

PRIVATE

8. I remember one day at school before we were allowed in to the classroom SR 34 SR 34 was checking that our hands were clean and our hair was brushed. She told me I was looking very pale and to go to bed. I went to bed and slept most of the day. No one checked on me or brought me anything. I told one of the lay members of staff that I had not had anything to eat all day and she told me to go back to bed as I was supposed to be unwell. I was a placid child who never put up a fight so I went back to bed. I was glad to get breakfast the next morning.
9. The food was not great, it was mainly porridge and stew. I remember at times being so hungry I would have sneaked into the kitchen after school and stuffed myself with bread. I was very lucky not to have been caught.
10. The routine was very regimental. We would have been up early, at about 6.30am, and been sent to bed early at about 6.30pm. Every day seemed to be the same. Religion played a big role in our daily routine. We had to go to mass every morning and after tea there was the rosary and benediction. We had chores to do like cleaning and polishing the floors. The education was poor. When I left Nazareth Lodge I could not read or write.
11. A lady named [REDACTED] came to Nazareth Lodge once a month and took me out for the day. This was usually a Sunday and I greatly looked forward to this day every month. During the summer another family called the [REDACTED] took me to Waringstown for two or three weeks. I thank God for those short breaks away as they are the only happy times I remember from my childhood. On returning to Nazareth Lodge the Sister would take away the sweets or money [REDACTED] or [REDACTED] [REDACTED] would have given me. I always just assumed the money went towards the upkeep of Nazareth Lodge. We would have nowhere to spend it anyway as we did not go out.
12. I vaguely remember when I was six or seven SR 34 SR 34 came to tell me there was a young couple asking to speak to me. SR 34 just told me to keep smiling. I think the couple only stayed for around ten minutes and gave me sweets. I have no recollection of the conversation. In hindsight I believe the

III.

4
TITLE

B.T.S and Pieces.

4

The older boys were in charge of us especially when the Nuns were in Chapel at Vespers. Winter times were the worst as they took great delight in scaring us with ghost stories making us run down the corridor from one end to the other shouting theres a ghost coming up. so we would run to the other end, we now know it was somebody with a sheet over him and a halloween mask on.

The worst time of all was when we were making our first communion. Learning about taking the host at the altar rails, Confession, and following the mass in our new pray books. But going to confession always seemed a very long drawn out affair waiting for ages to go in the Box. In the end I was decided to just send a few Boys at a time, as so many wanted to go to the loo that they wet themselves when they got there. But the worst was to come after Confirmation we ALL had our new pray books and being excited we were all showing each other our books and whispering the Nun in Charge warned us to be quiet or else, in the end we all had to hand our pray books along the pew to her we never did see them again. After Mass, the Nun, ~~Sister~~ Monica, made all the boys (full length of the corridor) sit on the benches along the wall the older boys some were watching us, four other boys were in the dormitory with [redacted] one boy at a time went in laid across the bed being held down by the four boys, and caned six times across the Bum. we were not allowed to make any noise after it was over but sit quietly. one boy did, heard his head off and the older boys found this funny and egged him on. [redacted] came out and said if that boy did not stop that yelling we were all going to get it again. So the older boys used to say to him go on shout, Louder, and we had to sit there going ~~schree~~ sssss with our bottoms still sore. Not long after that every thing changed the older boys were transferred to a house in the country and Sister [redacted] was transferred to some where else, I believe because of her cruelty. New nuns arrived and that is when the 4 groups were formed [redacted] was the [redacted]

(The Choir) [redacted] (names not available yet) But [redacted] I believe knows them. [redacted] was in charge of the choir, we used to practice up stairs in the corridor at night when it was near Christmas time and to keep our voices clear and warm [redacted] used to bring up a large pot of very hot water

PRIVATE

He let me sleep in his bed that night but I got back into my own bed in the early hours.

12. I remember one Saturday night, the nuns were walking around the dormitory with clothes on a hanger, trying to decide who to bring to chapel. If we woke the next day, and there was an outfit hanging at the end of the bed it meant we were privileged. They would wash us and make sure our hair was done and we looked lovely. In the chapel the other children used to look round and say there's an orphan. The nuns would tell us not to look around because God was watching us.
13. I remember Father Brendan Smith visiting the home on one occasion. I remember standing outside a big wooden door with pigtails and a dress on. The nuns would stand behind us and poke us, telling us to sit on his knee and be nice to him. They told us to do what he said and to tell him that we were happy. He asked me questions about my name and my age. I don't remember being sexually abused at any time in the home.
14. I was fostered out from Nazareth Lodge since I was a baby. There were two girls, [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] who went to St Monica's Secondary School and would come into the home after school to help with the children in the orphanage. The [REDACTED] started to take me out every weekend to stay with the family, at their home in [REDACTED] I would go from a Friday until a Sunday. I never wanted to go back to the home on Sunday nights, because I knew what I was going back to. I used to beg them to let me stay but they said if I didn't go back they would never be allowed to have me again. On a Sunday my mummy used to make me up a bag of sweets as a bribe to get me to go back to Nazareth Lodge. I remember being brought back and the nuns trailing me out of the back of the car. They pulled me by the hair and said nobody wants you, we don't even want you. When I got back to the home, the piggy's used to steal my sweets. They would hit me and often they pulled and trailed me, but nothing was ever done about it. My mummy was a dressmaker and she used to make me lovely clothes and dresses but as soon as I went back to the home, the nuns took them off me and they were never seen again.

1 "If we woke the next day and there was an outfit
2 hanging at the end of the bed, it meant we were
3 privileged. They would wash us and make sure our hair
4 was done and we looked lovely."

5 You say:

6 "In the chapel the other children used to look
7 around and say, 'There's an orphan'."

8 **A. That's right.**

9 Q. "The nuns would tell us not to look around because God
10 was watching us."

11 **A. You had to keep just looking straightaway and praying**
12 **and being happy. "Always remember to be happy", to let**
13 **people know that you were, but you weren't.**

14 Q. Just to be clear here talking about going to chapel,
15 there was a chapel in Nazareth Lodge. Is this outside
16 of the home entirely that you are talking about, being
17 taken to a church outside?

18 **A. I'm not sure. I don't know. It might have been the**
19 **chapel in. I don't think they ever took us out.**

20 Q. You also at paragraph 13 say that you remember Father
21 Brendan Smyth visiting the home on one occasion and you
22 remember standing outside a big wooden door with
23 pigtails and a dress on. You say:

24 "The nuns would stand behind us and poke us, telling
25 us to sit on his knee and be nice to him. He told us to

PRIVATE

woman who the nuns decided I should go out with during holiday time. They wanted to adopt me but they were not allowed. They were lovely people but I do not understand why I was sent with them instead of my grandparents.

6. I used to see my younger brother get beaten for things that weren't his fault and it would tear me apart. Sometimes it was for things that were my fault. The nuns hit him in front of me so I would have to watch which was worse than being hit myself.
7. Our daily routine was to get up early, go to mass, have breakfast, go to school, have tea, and go to benediction and then bed. Religion was a very big part of our daily routine with mass, benediction and confession. It was more important to the nuns than education which is why we were not well educated in Nazareth Lodge. I have no recollection of homework or exams. We went to school in Nazareth Lodge. It felt like we never left the building.
8. All the boys had to do chores before school every day like cleaning and tidying.
9. When I was eleven I was sent to Rubane House in Kircubbin. I was happy about getting away from the nuns but sad about leaving my younger brother behind. I had very little contact with him for about a year after that. The odd weekend my grandparents would have taken me to see him.

De La Salle Boys' Home, Rubane House, Kircubbin (15/08/1965 – 30/08/1968)

10. I was taken to Rubane from Nazareth House in a minibus driven by one of the Brothers. The head Brother was called BR 6 The first six months were okay. My older brother wasn't really interested in me as he hadn't seen me in years and he had his own friends. I was very much on my own.

PRIVATE

and benedictions and marched at the front of holy parades. I was also in the choir until one day we all had to sing by ourselves and I got thrown out. I think my voice was breaking at the time. This upset me because the choir had been promised sweets at Easter and sweets were a rarity in the Lodge.

16. We wore shorts all the time with an orange jacket. The bedding was just blankets and sheets and I don't think we had pyjamas. It was quite warm in bed because they had central heating with big radiators. After school we would go to a big common room where there was a gramophone and a radio. Outside, there was a big field and when I got older, we had our own gardening section where we grew gooseberries and things like that.

17. On bath nights, we all had to strip naked and get into a queue. There would be two nuns, one on each side of the bath. The nuns I remember are Sister **SR 118** **SR 36** **SR 100** and the Reverend Mother. They would bathe two boys at a time. The nuns washed us with carbolic soap and their hands. If you were messing around in the queue, you would get a good dunking in the bath. I never saw them change the water or add hot water but it was warmish. We would stand and wait to be dried then. We got bathed every Saturday evening for Sunday Mass and we always got a bath before feast days.

18. We used to have to clean the dormitories with this thing they called a bumper. It was extremely heavy and if you weren't getting on well with it, you'd get a dig or a clout from one of the older boys. You were brutalised. As I got older, they started sending the older boys to Rubane, so there wasn't as much of an age gap in the dormitories. They sent the first group of older boys to Rubane in 1951 when I was ten. The older boys were sent to Rubane at twelve so we didn't have it as bad. At least then there weren't fourteen year old boys in the dormitory with six year olds.

19. The nuns were also violent with us sometimes. When I was nine we went for Confirmation. It was the 13th March 1951. I was sitting there in the church with the other boys when all of a sudden I was dragged out by the ear. I can't

PRIVATE

remember her name but a nun dragged me down the aisle and slapped me on the back of the head, saying 'you're not baptised'. How was I supposed to know I hadn't been baptised? They were really angry about that though because I had been an altar boy and had received Communion. It upset them to think they had a pagan in the community.

20. They were also angry because this all happened while the Bishop Dr Mageean was there. I ended up getting baptised and confirmed on that same day in March 1951. My records from Nazareth Lodge state that I was baptised in St. Brigid's Church, Belfast but that is wrong – it was Holy Rosary Church on the Ormeau Road. They also got my date of birth wrong on my records.

21. My mother came up to visit me a few times in Nazareth Lodge but not that often because she was living outside Belfast and travelling was difficult in those times. Before these visits, the nuns told me to be careful what I said. I knew what they meant – not to be saying anything derogatory. During the visit, we would just sit out in the field and talk for about an hour. Even though my brother **NL 37** was in the nursery in Nazareth Lodge, he was never brought on these visits with my mother. I never saw him after he was brought in. When he was brought in, they took me over to the nursery and said this is your brother but that was the last I ever saw of him.

22. I never saw anybody from the Welfare or anyone coming to inspect Nazareth Lodge while I was there. The nit-nurse and the dentist used to come out.

23. I was sent out for weekends a few times to different families, I remember one of them was a doctor. I also went out to visit my mother a couple of times. She was living in an army hut on the Castlereagh Road at that stage.

24. At Christmas we used to go to Mackies for a party. We would get an apple, an orange and a couple of nuts in a bag.

25. When the time came for me to leave Nazareth Lodge, I was just told one day to get on the bus and we were driven to Rubane. All we had was the clothes on our backs.

PRIVATE

sure you were still kneeling there. One of the class boys also had to keep an eye on you to make sure you were still kneeling. When you thought everyone was asleep you could get back into bed.

7. We were made to sleep with our arms crossed over our chests. We did not have pyjamas, we slept in our underwear. If anyone made a noise at night time the Sister would make them kneel in the corridor in their underwear with their hands above their heads. The class boys would supervise and if anyone dropped their hands they would hit your fingers and the nuns would hit you with their belt. I was regularly subjected to this type of ill treatment.
8. For breakfast we had porridge and a round of dripping bread and a cup of tea. We would have got a bottle of milk at school in the morning. We did not get anything to eat until our lunch. I do not remember getting very much for our tea. It was maybe bread and jam or something like that. I lost a lot of weight when I was in Nazareth Lodge.
9. After breakfast **SR 118** would shout out the names of boys who had been bad. There were various "crimes" that we could have committed that resulted in punishment by the nuns, such as being cheeky. The worst "crime" was coughing in church. The nuns thought that was being disrespectful. If you had been bad you had to kneel in a line in front of **SR 118** with your hands up in front of everyone else. **SR 118** would hit you with a spindle from the back of a chair on the hands. Sometimes blood would run out of your hands. I was subjected to this type of punishment two or three times a week. I was always being punished for coughing in church. I had a tickly throat and the nuns would not believe me that I was coughing unintentionally.
10. On a Friday night we had a bath. There were five baths for about forty boys. The ones at the back of the queue got a dirty, cold bath. I was always nearer the back of the queue than the front. Jeyes fluid was put in the bath and carbolic soap was used. I never had a toothbrush. I never saw the dentist or a doctor the whole time I was in Nazareth Lodge. If you were sick they held your nose and gave you a spoonful of castor oil. I remember during bathtime once **SR 118**

REPORT ON VISITATION

Nazareth Lodge,
BELFAST.

October 28th - November 5th, 1989.

COUNCIL MEETING in connection with the Visitation held on November 5th, 1989.

Presided over by: [REDACTED] (Regional Superior)

Members present: [REDACTED] of the Infant Jesus (Superior)
[REDACTED] (1st Councillor)
[REDACTED] (2nd Councillor)

OBSERVANCE OF RULE AND RELIGIOUS DISCIPLINE: The members agree that there is a good religious spirit in the House and, on the whole, the spiritual exercises are punctually attended. A Sister, late or absent from an exercise, should give the reason to the Superior. The silence could be observed better, especially at the washing up. There is a conference on the Day of Recollection and Exposition of the Blessed Sacrament terminating with Benediction at 4p.m. House Meetings should be held as laid down. The Confessor comes every fortnight.

BURSAR'S REMARKS AND BURSAR'S STORE: The Bursar, who is incapacitated at present, said she is free to order all she needs for the House. Good meals are provided and are greatly appreciated. The Sisters in the children's groups cook their own meals on three evenings in the week. The wine and spirits are in safe custody.

SISTERS' PART: The rooms in the Sisters' part of the House are very clean and tidy. The teaching Sisters still continue to be very generous in keeping the Convent in good order.

CHAPEL: Everything for use in the Chapel is in perfect order. A lady is employed to do the cleaning on three days a week. The tabernacle key and sacred vessels are kept locked in the safe.

LINEN ROOM AND LAUNDRY: A very competent lady does the necessary sewing. There is no laundry as such. The Sisters do their own washing and the children's laundry is done in the groups.

BOOKS ORDERED TO BE KEPT: The books are all neat and up-to-date. The Discharge Book should always be signed and the register number entered. The date of discharge should be stated in the Register. There are now books for Gratuities and Donations.

EMPLOYMENTS:

<u>Children:</u>	Bethlehem 1	Boys 6	Girls 3
	Bethlehem 2	Boys 5	Girls 2
	Sacred Heart	Boys 4	Girls 4
	Total	Boys 15	Girls 9

The Sisters and staff responsible for the care of the children are very kind and dedicated. Great patience and understanding are needed when dealing with these boys and girls many of whom are teenagers with emotional problems. The work is very demanding and time consuming, still the spiritual life of the Sisters should always be given priority; sufficient staff should ensure that this is so. The future of child care in this House will have to be considered.

Retired Priests: One of the retired Priests died recently. His companion is very happy and contented. He concelebrates Mass frequently with the Chaplain.

St. Michael's Primary School: Enrolment 430.

There are seventeen teachers employed in the school, including the three Sisters. Great success in many fields is achieved by the pupils and the school is rated very highly in the area. This year some of the pupils were chosen to plant trees on the Ravenhill Road, under the guidance of the Head

J.M.J.+

REPORT ON VISITATION

Nazareth Lodge,
BELFAST.

November 3rd - 13th, 1987.

COUNCIL MEETING, in connection with the Visitation, held on November 11th, 1987.

PRESIDED OVER BY:- Reverend Mother General.

MEMBERS PRESENT:-

OBSERVANCE OF RULE AND RELIGIOUS SPIRIT:- The members agree that there is a very good religious spirit in the House. The Sisters are generous and united. The Rule is observed and the religious exercises are faithfully attended. If a Sister is late for or absent from an exercise she should give the reason to the Superior. The Confessor comes twice a month but not on a set day. The Extraordinary Confessor visits every three months. On the 1st Friday of each month a Redemptorist Father gives a conference and is available for the Sacrament of Penance. On the monthly Day of Recollection the Blessed Sacrament is Exposed after the 10a.m. Mass and Exposition continues until Benediction at 4p.m., Evening Prayer being incorporated. House Meetings are to be held every two months as laid down.

BURSAR'S REMARKS AND BURSAR'S STORE:- The Bursar was called to the meeting and she reported that she is free to order all she requires for the House and her stores are well stocked. As Catering Sister, she provides excellent meals for all in the House and she is kind, generous, conscientious and always approachable. Wine and spirits are under control.

SISTERS' PART:- The convent is clean, tidy and comfortable for the Sisters. The teaching Sisters are generous in helping to keep it in order.

CHAPEL:- The Chapel is devotional, and spotlessly clean. The altar linen and vestments are in perfect order and the tabernacle key and sacred vessels are in a locked safe. An elderly Sister is in charge of the Chapel and she is to be commended for the excellent care she takes of all that pertains to the Chapel. A lady helps with the cleaning.

LINEN ROOM AND LAUNDRY:- A very good lady is employed to make the Sisters' habits and see to the linen room. It was observed that some Sisters' habits were shorter than the regulation length of 10" and this should be rectified. The Sisters see to their own laundry and the children's washing is done in the groups.

BOOKS ORDERED TO BE KEPT:- The books are neatly written and up-to-date. Sisters' books should be paged and have J.M.J.+ on each page. The Discharge Book should be dated, include Register Number, be signed and witnessed but not by a Sister. The Petty Cash Book should be balanced at the end of each month. It is recommended that books be kept for Gratuities and Donations.

EMPLOYMENTS:- Children: The children are in three groups.

Bethlehem 1	-	Boys 7	Girls - 5
Bethlehem 2	-	Boys 7	Girls - 6
Sacred Heart	-	Boys 4	Girls - 9
Total	-	Boys 18	Girls 20.

The children are very well cared for by the three Sisters and staff, who are patient and dedicated. They do all in their power to enable the children to grow and develop in the best possible way. Their spiritual needs are well catered for. A few of the older children are trained in independent living. They do their own budgeting, cooking etc., and a separate section of the House is set up for this purpose. Many of the children are difficult to manage coming, as they do, from very disturbed backgrounds. Great credit is due to the Sisters involved in this work but they should always remember that their spiritual life be given first place. They are reminded of this at the weekly meeting with the Superior.

Retired Priests: Two retired Priests are in residence at present. They are happy and speak highly of the care they receive.

26. From the time the Home opened in 1950 until 1970, groups of approximately twelve orphan boys were admitted from Nazareth Lodge, Belfast each year. During that twenty year period the total the number of boys admitted came close to two hundred. Generally, the only information that came with them was their names and dates of birth though later entrants may also have been accompanied by some Social Services reports. On occasions the background information was sparse in the extreme; without names of parents/siblings, where they came from, their medical history, their education attainments or special needs. The records were minimal. The government agencies had taken no responsibility for these boys. They were practically stateless, abandoned by both parents and the state. The sole responsibility for their care and education was left to others. Some families made a contribution but generally the only financial assistance came from the St. Vincent De Paul organisation which contributed 30/- per week for each boy. The Diocesan Orphan Society also contributed £1.00 and the remainder came from a small profit from the farm which was attached to the Home. It was totally inadequate to pay for staff, food, heating, lighting, clothes and leisure activities. The effort to pay back the debts to the Diocese and the Bank had a detrimental effect on the care of the boys. To this day I don't believe that many of the truly voluntary boys realise that the Nazareth nuns and De La Salle Brothers received no specific allowance or assistance for their care or in other words that they were maintained, not by Welfare Authority, but by the fund raising efforts of the religious congregations.

27. The majority of the boys from Nazareth Lodge remained in the Home for four years and in a very real sense saw the Home as their home and looked upon the Brothers as their guardians. They had few relationships outside of the home and lacked the social network supports that normal families had. Most of them found it difficult to leave the Home. When their turn came to be discharged and in an effort to make the transition as easy as possible the Brothers would have liaised with the Nazareth Lodge Welfare Committee and thereafter the Down & Connor Aftercare Committee with a view to getting the boys set up in employment and accommodation. In the early days a [REDACTED] worked with the boys to assist them getting and maintaining employment. His records for the 1962/1963 era

1 Q. And it was fairly time-consuming by the sound of it.

2 A. It really was, because I later worked in a fostering
3 unit and, you know, I appreciate just how much time it
4 takes. It wasn't satisfactory obviously at the time,
5 but with so many other work pressures it was very
6 difficult.

7 Q. You were having to learn how to do that with that
8 particular case, were you?

9 A. Yes. I think previous to that I had already done an
10 adoption assessment under supervision. So it wasn't
11 completely new to me, but I do remember assessing that
12 family and then unfortunately they were only able to
13 take the one child.

14 Q. Yes. Thank you.

15 A. Thank you.

16 CHAIRMAN: Well, NL190, that is all that we want to ask you
17 about. Thank you very much for coming to speak to us
18 today.

19 A. Thank you.

20 (Witness withdrew)

21 MS SMITH: Chairman, I don't believe the next witness is
22 scheduled until 2 o'clock.

23 CHAIRMAN: Yes. We have one witness who is coming and
24 another whose statement is to be read out. So we won't
25 sit before 1.45 at the earliest.

1 Q. Was there ever any discussion among the Sisters about,
2 "Well, we have been told that there is this new
3 childcare practice and we should do things differently"
4 or anything like that you recollect?

5 **A. Not while I was in Derry there wasn't.**

6 Q. Is it correct then that at some point later that you did
7 become aware of that?

8 **A. Yes. When I was in Belfast, definitely.**

9 Q. Now you moved to Belfast and you worked in the Sisters
10 of Nazareth Children's Home there and you were there
11 I believe from 1976. Is that correct?

12 **A. '75 to '77.**

13 Q. And during that period of time --

14 **A. Uh-huh.**

15 Q. -- how would you compare what was happening in Belfast
16 with what was -- what you had experienced in Derry?

17 **A. Oh, they were much further ahead really, and all the**
18 **children at that stage had their own individual social**
19 **workers, and we would have had six-monthly reviews, and**
20 **the children would have seen their social workers nearly**
21 **on a monthly, two-monthly basis, and it was a very**
22 **different set-up really, and they had boys and girls**
23 **together, which -- families were all together, which was**
24 **very different from what I had been accustomed to in**
25 **Derry.**

1 Q. Was there ever any discussion among the Sisters about,
2 "Well, we have been told that there is this new
3 childcare practice and we should do things differently"
4 or anything like that you recollect?

5 **A. Not while I was in Derry there wasn't.**

6 Q. Is it correct then that at some point later that you did
7 become aware of that?

8 **A. Yes. When I was in Belfast, definitely.**

9 Q. Now you moved to Belfast and you worked in the Sisters
10 of Nazareth Children's Home there and you were there
11 I believe from 1976. Is that correct?

12 **A. '75 to '77.**

13 Q. And during that period of time --

14 **A. Uh-huh.**

15 Q. -- how would you compare what was happening in Belfast
16 with what was -- what you had experienced in Derry?

17 **A. Oh, they were much further ahead really, and all the**
18 **children at that stage had their own individual social**
19 **workers, and we would have had six-monthly reviews, and**
20 **the children would have seen their social workers nearly**
21 **on a monthly, two-monthly basis, and it was a very**
22 **different set-up really, and they had boys and girls**
23 **together, which -- families were all together, which was**
24 **very different from what I had been accustomed to in**
25 **Derry.**

1 brought up on the screen, for instance, by '84 there was
2 like a daily log being kept. Do you remember having any
3 involvement in that?

4 **A. I don't remember. It was more case review work that**
5 **SR46 would have done. When children's case reviews were**
6 **coming up, SR46 would have done the work for that. Us**
7 **staff didn't do any written work.**

8 Q. So you didn't yourself. There wasn't a book for --

9 **A. There was later in SR10's group, but I don't remember in**
10 **SR46's group you had that.**

11 Q. So post-1985 your memory connected to SR10 is of a book
12 per child being kept?

13 **A. There was a diary kept, yes.**

14 Q. Diary, but prior to that it was more SR46 preparing the
15 case reviews?

16 **A. That's right.**

17 Q. Then did you ever attend the six-monthly reviews --

18 **A. No.**

19 Q. -- with the social workers coming in?

20 **A. No. The staff didn't. It was just SR46.**

21 Q. In terms of -- you are working in a children's unit with
22 sixteen children, some of whom had obviously difficult
23 backgrounds and might have brought with them all sorts
24 of difficulties that you had to manage. How was -- how
25 did you communicate? SR46 presumably isn't there all

5.1.1980

[REDACTED] were discharged from Nazareth Lodge to their prospective foster parents:-

[REDACTED]

There is a strong possibility that [REDACTED] will join her two sisters there at Easter.

Review to be held before Easter.

[REDACTED]

C11

EASTERN HEALTH AND SOCIAL SERVICES BOARD

PROGRESS REPORT ON CHILD IN CARE

Child's Name: HIA 10

d.o.b. [REDACTED]

Home Address: [REDACTED]

Section admitted/
committed to care: 93 (1a) (1b)

Date: 14.7.77

Parental Rights Order
Yes/No: Date:

F.P.O.

Previous placements in care:

Order	Placement	date	Reason for leaving				date
			Planned move	Break- down	Dis- charge	Other	
1	St. Joseph's Children's Home	14.7.77					1.9.77
2	Nazareth Lodge	1.9.77	*				
3							
4							
5							

Present Placement: *Children's Home/ ~~RESIDENTIAL HOME~~ (*Delete as appropriate)Address: SR 46
(Include Name of [REDACTED])

Foster Parents) Nazareth Lodge

Date Placed: 1.9.77

Dates of visits since last report. Identify to whom the visit was made, e.g. child, parents, and underline those on which the child was seen.

<u>18.7.78</u>	<u>21.8.78</u>	<u>20.9.78</u>	<u>27.9.78</u>	<u>18.10.78</u>	<u>29.11.78</u>	<u>8.12.78</u>	<u>9.12.78</u>	<u>14.12.78</u>
11.1.79		UNCLE						
Case Review								

AP 2

DOWN AND CONNOR CATHOLIC FAMILY WELFARE ADOPTION SOCIETYNAME:

Family

CASE REFERENCE:

Residential Care

ADDRESS:Nazareth Lodge,
Ravenhill Road,
BELFAST.DATE OF INQUIRY

REPORT Case Review 11/1/79

Present:-

new Social Worker on the children)

A general discussion took place about all three girls who are well settled at Nazareth Lodge.

There has been no contact with mother and it is very unlikely that there will be.

Future Plans:- It was felt that consideration has to be given to encourage the girls to build up as many outside contacts as possible - bearing in mind that when they pass out of care they will have no family contacts to fall back upon. In close collaboration with Sr. Ambro The new social worker to explore possibility of

(a) children building contact in their own community with friends etc with whom they would have grown up - e.g. go to disco's etc.

(b) Mr. Orr hoped to consider possibility of children attending Glebe House for a number of week-ends during the summer.

(c) Down and Connor office to look out for couple who would be prepared to act as Aunt and Uncle towards these children.

Immaculata to be approached re possibility of Susan getting careers advice.

Child Care Adviser.

1 brought up on the screen, for instance, by '84 there was
2 like a daily log being kept. Do you remember having any
3 involvement in that?

4 **A. I don't remember. It was more case review work that**
5 **SR46 would have done. When children's case reviews were**
6 **coming up, SR46 would have done the work for that. Us**
7 **staff didn't do any written work.**

8 Q. So you didn't yourself. There wasn't a book for --

9 **A. There was later in SR10's group, but I don't remember in**
10 **SR46's group you had that.**

11 Q. So post-1985 your memory connected to SR10 is of a book
12 per child being kept?

13 **A. There was a diary kept, yes.**

14 Q. Diary, but prior to that it was more SR46 preparing the
15 case reviews?

16 **A. That's right.**

17 Q. Then did you ever attend the six-monthly reviews --

18 **A. No.**

19 Q. -- with the social workers coming in?

20 **A. No. The staff didn't. It was just SR46.**

21 Q. In terms of -- you are working in a children's unit with
22 sixteen children, some of whom had obviously difficult
23 backgrounds and might have brought with them all sorts
24 of difficulties that you had to manage. How was -- how
25 did you communicate? SR46 presumably isn't there all

1 and I think that was one of the keys things I suppose.
2 The changes were to professionalise, to professionalise
3 the service. I mean, I think the homely atmosphere, the
4 warmth -- it was a very family-like flat that I worked
5 in and that piece I think was really good. It was
6 really to hold that, but also to professionalise the
7 work and also increase staff, staff training, beginning
8 to sort of have -- develop that -- what do you call
9 it -- that key worker role, and to change the buildings,
10 to involve children and staff. So that all happened,
11 but it possibly took a couple of years to kind of get to
12 it to a place I think where it ended, which was all our
13 staff were qualified by the end of the home closing.

14 Q. One small aspect of that was the daily log sheet that
15 was kept, daily --

16 A. Yes.

17 Q. -- history that was kept on each individual child by
18 a key worker.

19 A. Yes. They had individual books, because I had forgotten
20 really and I had kind of remembered. So they had --
21 there's a book. So the key worker would have -- would
22 have logged the child. They actually would have
23 completed what was the C11 form, the review. They would
24 have done that with their key children. You know, most
25 of them had about two key children who they were meant

1 **A. We had to do a report from the last how things were,**
2 **like family visits and how the children were**
3 **progressing.**

4 Q. Can you say what happened to that report?

5 **A. The social worker took a copy of the report and we kept**
6 **the report filed in each child's file.**

7 Q. I'm just going -- I'm just pausing, Sister, because I am
8 conscious that I am going quite quickly with you through
9 matters. If we can just explore a little bit more about
10 the child's file, what did that consist of?

11 **A. Sorry. I missed the question.**

12 Q. Sorry. Forgive me. Just explore a little bit more
13 about the files, the child's file that you were talking
14 about. What records were actually kept in respect of
15 the child?

16 **A. Their medical records would have been kept, and, I mean,**
17 **if they had to see the doctor, we'd put a report in, and**
18 **misbehaviour, if there was something major, and family**
19 **visits would have been recorded as well.**

20 Q. In what -- what form were these documents? How did --
21 how were they kept physically? What did they physically
22 look like?

23 **A. Well, A4 sheets we would have written reports on and the**
24 **doctor -- we had a form the doctor would have filled in.**

25 Q. The -- each child -- each individual child had its own

7. Some of the Sisters would have been trained and qualified teachers. They would have risen around 6am, dressed and had Morning Prayer or meditation for about half an hour. They would then attend Mass followed by breakfast and would then have gone on to their appointments as teacher for their normal daily work.
8. In the evening the Sisters would then follow the routine of the Rosary and a light supper followed by prayer and bed around 9.00 pm. Many of the teaching Sisters would also have assisted with the children in the morning and in the evening to supervise mealtimes, home works and general oversight of the children.
9. The Sisters who were responsible for attending to the children would normally have had some form of early year's child care qualifications. They would rise before the children for their own prayer and would then be available to assist in getting the children up and dressed to serve their breakfast and make sure that they were then sent out to school wearing their appropriate uniforms. When the children were not with the Sisters in the Home, they would have had other duties to deal with such as supervising the children who may not have been at school because they were ill or too young, ensuring that the accommodation was appropriately tidied, cleaned and maintained as well as their own religious duties. They would supervise the mealtimes, homework and recreation activity of the children.
10. The Sisters are using and accepting the widest definition of abuse when they respond to the queries raised by the Inquiry. They accept and understand this to include all aspects of physical, emotional, psychological and sexual abuse.
11. Over the recent years a number of former residents have come to the Sisters, both North and South of the border and as a result of the Ryan Commission in the South of Ireland, regarding complaints and recollections of their time within the care of the Sisters. Many tell of unhappiness in their time and this is a matter of deep regret to the Sisters.
12. In some of the cases, the former residents have made direct contact with the Sisters and have arranged to come and meet with them and discuss their time in care. Some have made indirect approaches and have either accepted responses through intermediaries or have eventually come to meet with the Sisters directly. Of these many of them describe a time where they did not feel that they were loved and cared for and that the Houses were not a warm happy place to be brought up.
13. It is a matter about which the Sisters feel very deeply as it was always their intention to provide a safe place for the young people in their care and it is a matter of deep regret to them that any child did not feel loved or cared for.
14. As a result of discussions and investigations over the recent years, including the Ryan Commission, claims brought to the Sisters' attention through intermediaries or directly and in light of this Inquiry, the Sisters do accept that on

6.3 The staffing levels in the home are low by comparison with those in other homes of comparable size. Allowance needs to be made for the commitment of time by the Sisters, who do not work a conventional 40 hour week. Apart from short periods of leave they are available to the children most of the time and they undertake sleeping-in duties. However, even allowing for this it is considered that the staffing levels are inadequate. Under present arrangements when a member of the care staff is on leave or attending a training course there is often only one member of care staff on duty in the unit along with the Sister. The Castle Priory Report guidelines would suggest that a home of this size accommodating children aged between 3 and 16 years requires at least 18 care staff as well as the management staff. It is understood that agreement has been reached recently in discussion with Eastern Health and Social Services Board representatives, to have the per capita payment increased.

6.4 All of the care staff are female. It is considered important that children growing up in care should have the opportunity for contact with adults of both sexes. It can be advantageous to have male staff to help with the supervision of practical and recreational activities of adolescent boys. The employment of some male staff would give adolescent males the chance to model themselves on appropriate adult male figures. It is, therefore, recommended that in recruiting staff consideration be given to the possibility of appointing some men.

children aged between 3 and 16 years requires at least 18 care staff as well as the management staff. It is understood that agreement has been reached recently in discussion with Eastern Health & Social Services board representatives, to have the pre capita payment increased”.

45. At paragraph 8.2 of the report the inspectors state that the present staffing levels are such that staff do not have enough time to spend on direct work with the children.
46. The monitoring statement for Nazareth Lodge in 1986/87 records that the home has generally kept with the recommendations in respect of staffing levels which have been put forward in success of reports with the exception of the appointment of a deputy head of home. In view of increasing behavioural problems the management committee intends to look at arrangements for night duty supervision. The appointment of a deputy was subject to the availability of funds. The objective of the home was to recruit staff with some relevant qualifications. The composition of the management committee and their respective occupations is contained at SNB14639.
47. The ‘aide memoir’ report recorded that the Eastern Board had recently increased the weekly pre capita payment from £80 to £147 with effect from 1 April 1987 conditional upon 2 additional staff being employed in each group. *“By making this a condition the Board is effectively imposing a staffing level in the home and their action needs to be clarified. Prior to this decision being made the home was incurring a substantial deficit and the board agreed to a deficit*

1 you know, for a sense that they came up to see me or --
2 because you were the primary person. We were the -- we
3 were the primary attachment figure, not exclusively.
4 I mean, I don't think to be a primary attachment figure
5 -- because we lived there. The children saw us as
6 living there, and they kind of identified we were the
7 same as them whereas staff could go home to their other
8 lives, but I don't think it was an exclusive
9 relationship, but I think that by forming that steady
10 attachment allowed them to create other relationships,
11 and that was really what the work is about is helping
12 children who are fragmented, to help them to relate to
13 other people, but -- so when they came up, I do remember
14 that, and I won't name her, but I remember -- I just
15 remember then she said, "You have no time for me", and
16 that's hard. She comes up to see me and I'm -- so you
17 actually can't dictate how others see and perceive and
18 suggest, and that's the hard bit, isn't it? You just do
19 your best and you hope you're doing your best and ...

20 Q. Well, Sister, just one thing that you didn't actually
21 address was the allegation that she made that SR18 told
22 you that she hated her.

23 A. I honestly can't remember that. So whether it happened
24 or not I really can't say, but I do not recall that
25 conversation.

There also were two housekeepers who would have come in the mornings between 9am to 1pm who would have helped with cleaning.

4. The children mostly had shared bedrooms at this stage although there were approximately four single rooms plus my own room on the unit. There was a kitchenette where we could prepare breakfast, snacks and supper.
5. In the building where we were in there were two units and mine was on the second floor. On the ground floor was the main kitchen with reception and parlour rooms as well as conference rooms which would have been used for six monthly assessments in relation to the children's progress. The other two units in Nazareth Lodge would have been at either side of a quadrangle outside the main building and they would have used the facilities in the main building as described.
6. The unit I was in had a long corridor going from one end of the unit to the other. At the bottom of the corridor there would have been bathrooms with toilets, baths and showers. Also in this area would have been the dining room and kitchen. The bedrooms would have been in the middle of the corridor. At the top end of the corridor was a living room with a TV, music centre and soft chairs. There also was a library / study and a reception area for visitors and families where they could meet the children.
7. We would have prepared breakfast, snacks and supper in the kitchen in the unit and would have eaten in the dining room. The main meal would have been prepared in the kitchen on the ground floor and there was a lift in the unit which would have gone down to collect the food and brought it up. The main meal would have been served about 5.00pm. The children would have eaten in the dining room along with the residential staff. I would usually have had a cup of tea with them but I would not have had my main meal until about 7pm in the convent after I had finished my other duties.
8. The ages of the children when I started were generally between 5 to 15 years of age. Work was constantly being done in order to improve the workings of the home and the conditions for the children. We progressed by reducing the numbers of children

HIA Ref: SR148

Name: SR 148

Date:

THE INQUIRY INTO HISTORICAL INSTITUTIONAL ABUSE 1922 - 1995

WITNESS STATEMENT OF SR 148

I, SR 148 will say as follows:-

Personal Details

1. I was born on the [REDACTED] I joined the Sisters of Nazareth in 1968 in Finchley, London. I stayed in Finchley for a year and then moved as a novice to Hendon where I stayed for two years. I was then professed in Hammersmith in 1971. I stayed in Hammersmith for two years which was in or around 1973. I then went to Swansea and it was then that I began to work with children. After a year I moved from Swansea to Kilnarnock where I stayed for two years, again working with children. After Kilnarnock I moved back to Swansea where I spent a further two years, again working with children.
2. In or around 1978 I left Swansea and went to Aberdeen where I completed a diploma in social work which took two years. After qualifying in social work I moved to Belfast in or around 1980 to Nazareth Lodge Children's Home on the Ravenhill Road.

My Time at Nazareth Lodge

3. I moved to Nazareth Lodge in or around 1980. There were four units at Nazareth Lodge and I was in charge of one of the units. When I began at Nazareth Lodge each unit would have had approximately between 15 and 17 children. In my unit there would have been 2 to 3 unqualified residential workers who would have assisted me.

1 together. We would have chatted. I would have -- they
2 would have known -- they would have talked about their
3 lives outside, you know. So that was a bit of a shock,
4 but I think what we needed to do -- that's I think round
5 that mid-'80s -- we just thought, "We need to make
6 changes here" and that's why we started renovating and
7 getting the physical piece better and trying to
8 professionalise it.

9 Q. Have you any memory of the staff as a group being
10 brought together to discuss what was in the inspection
11 report to say --

12 A. From my -- no, but, you see, the three groups didn't
13 work like that. I mean, my staff, the inspection report
14 would have been in the office. We all had separate
15 offices. My office would have been off the dining room
16 or the staff. So everything was in there and they would
17 have seen and we would have -- I would have talked with
18 the staff. I mean, our staff meetings would have
19 covered all aspects of the children's lives both, you
20 know, psychologically, physically, what they needed to
21 do, how to develop, but also what we needed to do,
22 because, I mean, I had -- the first male staff I think
23 I -- my unit was the first one to employ a male staff.
24 I think he came -- I think he came in '85, you know.
25 So, you know, we were beginning to do -- to do all that

year. When SR 202 who was qualified came to my group in May 1977 she had a manual typewriter which she used to document the minutes of these meetings. The only downside was that many of the junior field social workers were changed frequently and there was not the desired continuity of care and supervision.

17. In 1980 the appointment of SR 148 who was a qualified Social Worker was a progressive and positive step. She took on a monitoring and mentoring role and was a great support to staff in each of the groups. There were serious efforts to improve practice and planning for the children. Documentation and communication was greatly improved and a greater effort to release Sisters and staff for professional qualifications in social work became the norm. The issue of staff ratios and qualification was inextricably linked to the question of finance. Each child was assigned a keyworker. Sister had a lot of contacts with social services and with Mrs [REDACTED] from the Down and Connor office. The latter received half her salary from Nazareth Lodge.
18. A committee of volunteers which included a QC, a doctor, a social worker and a teacher carried out regular inspections and monitored the operation of the home from 1980 until its closure. They would spend time talking to the children, sharing a meal with them and observing interaction between the children and staff. A written report of these visits was submitted to the Sister in charge.
19. A number of families received monthly visits from their relatives. Some were allowed home occasionally at week-ends or during part of the school holidays with the approval and under supervision of social workers. If the family home was not deemed suitable for visits, children were placed with families recommended by social services. Even when children in care were invited by school friends to their birthday parties, permission to attend was asked of the relevant social workers.
20. Up until the mid-seventies when the boys left care they would attend St. Augustine's club where a chaplain and Miss [REDACTED] a senior social worker were responsible for their after-care.
21. After 1976 the children would have been found placements by Social Services who would have continued supervising and monitoring their residential needs. Some of the children would have returned to visit the Sisters and their former friends. An annual reunion of past residents was organised by the Sisters during the Christmas period and up to a hundred would have enjoyed a meal together along with entertainment.
22. In 1979 the Breda Football Club made a request to hire the pavilion erected by the Rosario Club and our tennis courts. They also got the use of one of our fields for Gaelic football on condition they would maintain it.

organisations, fully supported this and made available, opportunities for those staff who wished to avail of this

4. As with any children's residential establishments at that time, bank staff presented other problems (strangers to the children, upsets in routine, children missing the workers off at college, different ways of doing things etc...) Whilst these issues existed, we managed them accordingly by, always preparing the children for the changes and building in time for the staff out at college to call in to check how things were going and catch up with the children. The central figure however, in most of the children's lives, was the Sister-in Charge in each of the three units. She lived in the unit 24 -seven and most, if not all of the children, often saw her as the "mother figure". This arrangement meant that staff, (during my time), were not required to work beyond 10pm. This changed some years after I left the home and Nazareth Lodge complied with night time supervision requirements in line with other statutory and voluntary residential children's homes
5. During my time in Nazareth Lodge the level of care of the children, both physically and emotionally, was of a very good standard and this was highlighted in Department of Social Service Inspection Reports. As in all work places, there was always room for improvement and change and whilst the Order of Nazareth accepted recommendations of inspections, they at times, were sometimes slower to instigate some changes.
6. The large number of children I worked with during the eight years I worked there, felt they were wanted and cared for. Many of them shared this with me during my conversations and interactions with them. They of course struggled with their own internal issues and personal circumstances on an ongoing basis, as all children in long-term care do, but my experience of Nazareth was that they tried to "normalise" things as much as was possible to do, in order to create a sense of "home life" and "family". For example one of the ways in which this was achieved was through staff and children cooking meals together, staff encouraging children to do laundry and other chores together. There was a central kitchen, which provided food for each unit mostly at the weekends, but each unit gradually requested a food budget in order to buy and prepare their own meals. To my knowledge, this was not a feature of other children's homes at that time.

7. In hindsight, whilst there may have been questions by today's standards around health and safety and the preparation of food etc. this system, while it lasted, not only helped to teach children how to cook and manage budgeting for food, but also helped to form relationships between staff and children (where most of the therapeutic conversations and work was carried out and achieved whilst peeling potatoes and chopping carrots)!
8. During my time there, I did not witness or experience, or know of any abuse by adult staff against children or young people. Some incidents of peer abuse (both sexual and physical abuse) did take place and these cases were duly and effectively managed under the child protection procedures and managed by the Child Case Conference process, chaired by the statutory children's services.
9. Corporal punishment was not permitted at all and nor did I experience or know of this being used at any time.
10. The staff team in my unit were a good team consisting of male and female workers with a range and mix of skills and qualities. Over time, staff left and new staff quickly felt part of the team.
11. The one down fall was the lack of opportunity for promotion to senior positions for staff keen to develop these skills and roles. Whilst I was promoted to assistant team leader this was unique across the 3 units. A Sister of the Order was always in the senior management position.
12. Finally on a personal note, I had the occasion, approx 5 years ago, to have a chance meeting, while out shopping, with a former female resident. She had married and had two children and told me that she was happy and settled in life. We talked about old times in the unit and she recalled that while she struggled with her own issues at the time, she none the less, remembered experiencing a sense of "family" and togetherness. While she recalled herself to have been a "nightmare to look after", she told me she had appreciated the staff support and care she recalled receiving at a time when she most needed it.

7. In hindsight, whilst there may have been questions by today's standards around health and safety and the preparation of food etc. this system, while it lasted, not only helped to teach children how to cook and manage budgeting for food, but also helped to form relationships between staff and children (where most of the therapeutic conversations and work was carried out and achieved whilst peeling potatoes and chopping carrots)!
8. During my time there, I did not witness or experience, or know of any abuse by adult staff against children or young people. Some incidents of peer abuse (both sexual and physical abuse) did take place and these cases were duly and effectively managed under the child protection procedures and managed by the Child Case Conference process, chaired by the statutory children's services.
9. Corporal punishment was not permitted at all and nor did I experience or know of this being used at any time.
10. The staff team in my unit were a good team consisting of male and female workers with a range and mix of skills and qualities. Over time, staff left and new staff quickly felt part of the team.
11. The one down fall was the lack of opportunity for promotion to senior positions for staff keen to develop these skills and roles. Whilst I was promoted to assistant team leader this was unique across the 3 units. A Sister of the Order was always in the senior management position.
12. Finally on a personal note, I had the occasion, approx 5 years ago, to have a chance meeting, while out shopping, with a former female resident. She had married and had two children and told me that she was happy and settled in life. We talked about old times in the unit and she recalled that while she struggled with her own issues at the time, she none the less, remembered experiencing a sense of "family" and togetherness. While she recalled herself to have been a "nightmare to look after", she told me she had appreciated the staff support and care she recalled receiving at a time when she most needed it.

HIA REF: NL14

NAME: NL 14

DATE: [16.03.2015]

THE INQUIRY INTO HISTORICAL INSTITUTIONAL ABUSE 1922 TO 1995

Witness Statement of NL 14

NL 14 will say as follows:-

I was born on [REDACTED] and entered Nazareth Lodge as a child in the early 1950s. I stayed there until I was 11 or 12 when I moved to Rubane House. I enjoyed my upbringing in Nazareth Lodge and Rubane House and have no complaints about how I was treated in either institution.

I left Rubane when I was about 16 and went to work. Since leaving care I have always regularly called up to Nazareth Lodge to visit the nuns and I would often stay and have something to eat usually at tea time, about 5pm – 6pm when I had finished work.

Often when I would call up the nuns would ask me to take some of the boys out to the Gaelic pitch for football. There would usually be about 12 or so boys keen to play and we would play a 5 or 6 a-side match. There was always Nazareth Lodge staff on duty at the time when I took the boys out for football. This became a regular event and I took an interest in coaching the boys in soccer skills and playing soccer with them.

I had no other contact with the boys in Nazareth Lodge and no contact at all with the girls. I have never worked in Nazareth Lodge as a gardener or grounds man nor have I ever done odd jobs or worked there as a handyman or indeed in any capacity.

Nazareth Lodge had living quarters and games rooms and a kitchen on the ground floor and bedrooms on the first floor. I was familiar with the lay out as I had lived there as a boy. I have never been in any of the rooms since leaving Nazareth Lodge, except when walking through with one of the nuns to get something to eat from the kitchen.

In relation to the specific allegations made against me I wish to assert the following. In relation to the statement of HIA 10 [REDACTED], I know there were three [REDACTED] sisters in Nazareth Lodge but I had no contact whatsoever with any of them. I did not at any time go up to Nazareth Lodge with sweets. I never at any time got any of the children to rub my shoulders or feet. I never played with anyone's hair or rubbed my hands down their back or round their front. I never tickled or pretended to tickle any of the children or felt their chest accidentally or intentionally. I deny each of the allegations made against me by [REDACTED] they are false and I have no idea why she has made them.

I know there was a HIA 48 [REDACTED] at Nazareth Lodge. I had no contact whatsoever with her. I knew her because her brother was also there and was one of the boys who I would take out for

football when I called up to the Lodge. I totally deny the allegations [REDACTED] has made against me. I was never a member of staff at Nazareth Lodge. I have never chased [REDACTED] or hit her or was wicked to her. I have never touched any child in Nazareth Lodge. I completely deny the allegations [REDACTED] has made against me and have no idea why she has made these allegations.

I remember a HIA 210 [REDACTED] in Nazareth Lodge. I have never had any dealing with him at the Lodge. He was not one of the children who played football when I called up to take the children out for football. In relation to the allegations he has made against me I deny them. I do not know what he means by "three man lift." I have never heard of it, nor have I ever asked did anyone want to play it. I knew NL 56 [REDACTED] and NL 68 [REDACTED] but I have never got them to hold down HIA 210 [REDACTED] nor have I ever pulled my trousers down and sat on HIA 210 [REDACTED] face. The allegations are completely false and I have no idea why he has made them.

Statement of Truth

I believe that the facts stated in this witness statement are true.

NL 14 [REDACTED]
Signed [REDACTED]

Dated 16-3-2015 _____

PRIVATE

and front. I was young and inquisitive and I just lifted it. There are no doctors' records for me and I don't remember seeing any medical person about it. I just remember my mum coming to see me then and she said that I was unrecognisable. I do remember having the mumps when I was 4 but don't remember anyone ever coming to see me about it.

Nazareth Lodge

4. There were three groups in Nazareth Lodge. I was in [SR 29] group, [NL 109] [NL 108] [HIA 93] and [NL 33] were in [SR 46] group and [NL 68] [NL 30] and [NL 97] were in [SR 62]. I was kept separate from my brothers and sisters. My brothers and sisters came to visit me and they used to look through the fire doors which had glass panels at me but I didn't know who they were. I never felt loved. They were all together in different units but because I was the youngest I was on my own. I always felt alone. I never remember having any other children or toys to play with. I just used to sit and make daisy chains out in the green area. I remember [NL 30] and [NL 97] had toys outside like swingball. We used to get together on days out to Portrush or maybe events like Christmas parties. I had no idea who my brothers and sisters were, just that they were waving and coming over to hug me. We got to sit on Santa's knee and got a present given to us to have our photo taken. As soon as the photo was taken, the nuns took the presents from us and we never saw them again. It was all for show.
5. My first day of primary school was horrible. I remember I was marched down a corridor and taken to the door and told to go on in. [SR 29] just left me outside the door. I had no support or help. I used to ask the older children to help me but all they used to do was beat me up. There was no-one else from my unit in my school. The school was within the grounds so we just walked across the courtyard to it. It was separate to the residential unit and was called St Michael's primary school. There were other children from the community there because I didn't know any of them. After I left care I also went to [REDACTED] school on the [REDACTED] Road.

PRIVATE

8. **SR 29** was like a black shadow that followed me everywhere. I can also remember **NL 5** was looking after my brothers and sisters in **SR 62** group. She sometimes came to my group and she used to wave her fist at me. She was not a nice person. **NL 30** and **NL 97** were in the unit next to mine being looked after by **SR 62** and **SR 62** made them both eat a bar of soap to wash their mouths out for their sins.
9. I wet the bed until I was fourteen and I remember that I just lay in the wet sheets. I remember having to change my own wet bed sheets. I was trailed out of my bed, the sheet put over my head and I was made to say prayers for it.
10. I shared a big room with one other child. There was an older girl called **SR 29** with blonde hair who checked on us during the night. She was helping me do my homework one night and my sisters in the next unit could hear somebody crying. They didn't know who it was until they heard her smacking me harder and harder, screaming at me and saying I was thick, that I had to do it and that **SR 29** had put her in charge of me. She continuously punched me in the head until I cried really loudly. My sisters came into my unit through the fire doors and there was confrontation between her and my sisters. The Sisters came in like riot squad, took **NL 33** by the scruff of the neck and threw her against the unit. They slammed the door shut, didn't ask about what was happening and we were left there until morning time. I could never sleep at night time in that place and I still can't sleep to this day.
11. I remember they took us to Portrush and someone took photographs of me lying in the bed sleeping. Nine of us were taken on that holiday. There is also a picture of me and my brother and sister sitting on a hill just down from the guest house but I have no recollection of the guest houses.
12. When I was given back to my mother at the age of five or six, she was a complete stranger. There was no aftercare to see how we getting on. I didn't realise that I had a different daddy to the rest of my brothers and sisters. Their daddy died of cancer and I was always led to believe that he was my father as

PRIVATE

6. **SR 29** was in charge of our unit. She was very wicked and I remember an incident when she forced food into my mouth. It happened at Sunday lunch and I was the only one left at the table. **SR 29** sat at the top of the table with her arms folded and told me I had to eat my food even though I didn't want anymore. She turned my chair around to face her and put two brussell sprouts on the fork, swished them around the gravy and shoved them into my mouth. I was immediately sick all over her and she slapped me in the face, dragged me out of the kitchen and put me into the room and closed the door. I still have a gagging reflex from that. I never saw her doing that to anyone else. The food was horrible. For breakfast I got cold toast and sometimes porridge. As soon as you arrived into the unit Sister **SR 29** also used to cut our hair and you were left that you didn't know if you were a boy or a girl. I felt that my identity was stripped. I was always afraid in that place. When they spoke to me I would put my hands up because I never knew what was going to come next. The clothes I wore were always from the storage cupboard that they had in the home.
7. I had a social worker called **NL 110** but although she was the longest standing social worker she never helped me. The only time I saw her was when she came in the front door straight into **SR 29** office. Any time I was brought in there the door was closed. **SR 29** was always there so I never got a chance to tell **NL 110** anything. I think **SR 29** was afraid to leave me alone with her in case I said anything. The Sisters and the social workers never got down to my level, as a child and they were always looking down at me. I always just looked at the ground because I was afraid of looking into their eyes because I was so afraid of them. Other female staff in the unit made me stand on top of a tin mop bucket and do all the dishes and I was only five or six. I was made to do this every other day. I don't remember their names but I was smacked a lot by these staff members and I also remember **SR 29** used to put me over her knee and use a leather strap to hit me. She used to keep this in her drawer. I recall one social worker **NL 281** He was the one that got us out but after that I don't remember ever seeing him or anyone else. There was no one that kept an eye on us.

PRIVATE

6. **SR 29** was in charge of our unit. She was very wicked and I remember an incident when she forced food into my mouth. It happened at Sunday lunch and I was the only one left at the table. **SR 29** sat at the top of the table with her arms folded and told me I had to eat my food even though I didn't want anymore. She turned my chair around to face her and put two brussell sprouts on the fork, swished them around the gravy and shoved them into my mouth. I was immediately sick all over her and she slapped me in the face, dragged me out of the kitchen and put me into the room and closed the door. I still have a gagging reflex from that. I never saw her doing that to anyone else. The food was horrible. For breakfast I got cold toast and sometimes porridge. As soon as you arrived into the unit Sister **SR 29** also used to cut our hair and you were left that you didn't know if you were a boy or a girl. I felt that my identity was stripped. I was always afraid in that place. When they spoke to me I would put my hands up because I never knew what was going to come next. The clothes I wore were always from the storage cupboard that they had in the home.
7. I had a social worker called **NL 110** but although she was the longest standing social worker she never helped me. The only time I saw her was when she came in the front door straight into **SR 29** office. Any time I was brought in there the door was closed. **SR 29** was always there so I never got a chance to tell **NL 110** anything. I think **SR 29** was afraid to leave me alone with her in case I said anything. The Sisters and the social workers never got down to my level, as a child and they were always looking down at me. I always just looked at the ground because I was afraid of looking into their eyes because I was so afraid of them. Other female staff in the unit made me stand on top of a tin mop bucket and do all the dishes and I was only five or six. I was made to do this every other day. I don't remember their names but I was smacked a lot by these staff members and I also remember **SR 29** used to put me over her knee and use a leather strap to hit me. She used to keep this in her drawer. I recall one social worker **NL 281** He was the one that got us out but after that I don't remember ever seeing him or anyone else. There was no one that kept an eye on us.

Name: [REDACTED]

Date: 7th November 2014

THE INQUIRY INTO HISTORICAL INSTITUTIONAL ABUSE 1922 TO 1995

Witness Statement of Sister Catherine Walsh

I, [REDACTED] will say as follows: -

1. I worked in Nazareth Lodge from 7th October 1976 until 18th August 1983 and was formerly known as [REDACTED]
2. [REDACTED] and her sister [REDACTED] known as [REDACTED] were in my unit. [REDACTED] looked after [REDACTED] like a little mother. Their mother visited me on a regular basis. She spent time with her children in each unit. [REDACTED] Social Worker also visited regularly.
3. There were no restrictions on siblings visiting from other units. [REDACTED] brothers and sisters were very fond of her and protective over her.
4. With regard to paragraph 4, presents given to the children by Santa were never taken away.
5. With regard to paragraph 5, I do not recall leaving [REDACTED] outside the door without support or help. Rather, the children would have been brought to school by a member of staff.
6. With regard to paragraph 6, I have no recollection of [REDACTED] being force-fed. Some children would have took longer to finish their meal and would be left at the table until they had done so. I also would not have cut the hair of any child; cutting hair was not one of my skills so a member of staff usually did it. Sometimes relatives took children to the local hairdressers.
7. With regard to paragraph 7, I never put a child across my knee or used a leather strap. I do not remember [REDACTED] standing on a tin bucket but she may have helped with the washing up. A lot of the children would help with the dishes and [REDACTED]

PRIVATE

9. Christmas and birthdays weren't celebrated in Nazareth Lodge. I didn't know what Christmas or my birthday was until I went to Marmion. I never went on any holidays or out to families the entire time I was in Nazareth Lodge.

Marmion House, Holywood, Co. Down (15th November 1975 – 1987 approximately)

10. I was so happy to move to Marmion; it was like a holiday camp. We all went together and it was such a relief. It was smaller than Nazareth Lodge. I think there were three groups of children with around twelve in each group. I was with my brothers [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] and my sisters were there too but they were in different rooms. Marmion was totally different to Nazareth Lodge. We got better clothes, pocket money, and better food. We could go to the fridge whenever we wanted and we got three meals a day. We were very well looked after.
11. The staff weren't allowed to hug or kiss us because they were really wary of potential allegations. The Kincora scandal was coming out at that time and they were very standoffish. They didn't discourage contact between us siblings; it was just from the staff. I didn't suffer any abuse while at Marmion. My mother and father visited us the odd time there but at separate times. I went to secondary school in [REDACTED] in Bangor. I wasn't great academically and I left with seven CSE's.

Life after care

12. I left Marmion at eighteen and got a job as a plasterer. You had to leave the care system at 18 so I got a flat in Holywood. There was no aftercare or anyone looking after me; I was on my own. I had lots of different social workers while I was in Marmion but I had so many I can't remember any of their names. Once you were 18 that was it. I got married when I was 21 and was divorced at 22. I had a daughter and she is now 24 but I just have no bond with her. I had no contact with her growing up. I just didn't want to bother

organisations, fully supported this and made available, opportunities for those staff who wished to avail of this

4. As with any children's residential establishments at that time, bank staff presented other problems (strangers to the children, upsets in routine, children missing the workers off at college, different ways of doing things etc...) Whilst these issues existed, we managed them accordingly by, always preparing the children for the changes and building in time for the staff out at college to call in to check how things were going and catch up with the children. The central figure however, in most of the children's lives, was the Sister-in Charge in each of the three units. She lived in the unit 24 -seven and most, if not all of the children, often saw her as the "mother figure". This arrangement meant that staff, (during my time), were not required to work beyond 10pm. This changed some years after I left the home and Nazareth Lodge complied with night time supervision requirements in line with other statutory and voluntary residential children's homes
5. During my time in Nazareth Lodge the level of care of the children, both physically and emotionally, was of a very good standard and this was highlighted in Department of Social Service Inspection Reports. As in all work places, there was always room for improvement and change and whilst the Order of Nazareth accepted recommendations of inspections, they at times, were sometimes slower to instigate some changes.
6. The large number of children I worked with during the eight years I worked there, felt they were wanted and cared for. Many of them shared this with me during my conversations and interactions with them. They of course struggled with their own internal issues and personal circumstances on an ongoing basis, as all children in long-term care do, but my experience of Nazareth was that they tried to "normalise" things as much as was possible to do, in order to create a sense of "home life" and "family". For example one of the ways in which this was achieved was through staff and children cooking meals together, staff encouraging children to do laundry and other chores together. There was a central kitchen, which provided food for each unit mostly at the weekends, but each unit gradually requested a food budget in order to buy and prepare their own meals. To my knowledge, this was not a feature of other children's homes at that time.

PRIVATE

Nazareth Lodge, Belfast (24/2/1948 – 21/12/1956)

2. I was admitted to Nazareth Lodge on 24th February 1948 when I was almost three years old. My life in Nazareth Lodge was bleak, harsh and cruel. The nuns were at best indifferent but more often were sadistic bullies who spoke with harsh loud voices in scornful, dismissive tones. They were quick to strike out and provided no reassurance or comfort to a small frightened child.
3. We slept in a large dormitory which had beds down the sides of the room and a row in the middle. There was a cubicle in the corner where the nun who was in charge of that dormitory slept.
4. I endured countless acts of physical violence and equally as traumatic, witnessed daily assaults as children were literally picked up by their ears and thrown to the ground, belted and kicked around. As a very small boy the terror of their shouting and name calling was terrifying. We were all called 'sons of whores', a term I never understood except that it was obviously bad and meant we were all very bad children. The verbal abuse from the nuns has stayed with me and I have never been able to forget how it made me feel as a young child.
5. I cried myself to sleep so often, in beds that were never warm enough with inadequate blankets, leaving me with freezing feet and never any sense of comfort or security.
6. As an adult I suffer from profound hearing loss. I am totally deaf in one ear and have only slight hearing in the other only assisted by a hearing aid that costs me approximately \$5000 AUD to replace every five years. My audiologist is clear this is the result of trauma from constant beatings to my head and ears as a child. Particularly when the nuns would 'box my ears' – slapping me hard with open palms across both ears, that forced air and pressure into my ears leading to permanent damage. The pain was excruciating and I would be nauseous and lose balance when they did that. They did it often. They crept up behind me if I was talking or something and they would say 'take that' HIA 307. By the time I left Nazareth Lodge in 1956 my hearing was severely impaired and it

HIA 307

PRIVATE

PRIVATE

4. I collected the jotters from everyone in class one day. They were all covered in fine wallpaper. One boy who was the biggest bully in the class bit in to the corner of his. When [SR 101] was going through the jotters she accused me of biting it as the other boy had denied biting his jotter. When I denied it she made me put my teeth in to the bite marks so she could compare. I do not understand how making me put my teeth into the marks would allow her to compare. If she wanted to compare she should have made me bit beside the teeth marks. She beat me in front of the entire class. She said she was going to beat me until I told the truth. She made me kneel down in front of the class with my hands out. She hit me with the handle of a hurley stick. She kept hitting me until she got tired. My arms dropped down from the tiredness of holding them up and my fingers curled from the pain. I lost five finger nails in the next couple of weeks as a result of the beating.
5. When I was taught by [SR 118] I was a class boy and was in charge of cleaning her room. She beat me every day for various reasons like not putting her ink well in the right place or leaving dust in her classroom. I lived in constant fear of her. She destroyed my confidence. My brother told me years after we left care that my father had asked [SR 118] for clothing coupons to buy us clothes. He was never heard from again. I think that is why [SR 118] hated us.
6. Around the same time I was also put in charge of a group of boys in the St Joseph's dormitory. If one of the boys I was in charge of lost something like his sock or wet the bed I was also beaten by [SR 118]. One of the boys wet the bed once and [SR 118] blamed me for not making sure he had been to the toilet before he went to bed. She put me in a cold bath and got an older boy to pour buckets of cold water over my head. I was then taken out of the bath and [SR 118] beat me with the handle of a hurley stick. After the second hit I said "that's sore Sister". She then hit me in the groin. She hit me about six times in total and the pain was unbearable. [SR 118] told me after we left care that [SR 118] had threatened to punish a boy in his dormitory called [SR 118] in this way and he threatened to jump out the window.

1 had sunk their teeth into it, and she decided that --
2 she asked you to bite into the same place and decided
3 that you were responsible for having done that. I think
4 you know it was another older boy, but you weren't
5 prepared to tell on him.

6 **A. Can I just say something?**

7 Q. Of course.

8 **A. I was asked to collect the jotters.**

9 Q. Yes.

10 **A. I didn't know that had been done --**

11 Q. Yes.

12 **A. -- and when it went up, she asked me did I do it. She**
13 **asked the boy did he. "That's your jotter. Did you do**
14 **it?" He said, "No". So -- I said, "No". I knew**
15 **nothing about it.**

16 Q. But she decided --

17 **A. She said, "I'm going to beat you till you tell the**
18 **truth".**

19 Q. She decided you were responsible and told you that she
20 was going to hit you until you admitted that it was you.

21 **A. Yes.**

22 Q. You explain in your statement how you were beaten in
23 front of the entire class --

24 **A. Yes.**

25 Q. -- and how she used a hurley stick to beat you on the

1 hands.

2 **A. Yes. You had better say "handle of a hurley stick".**

3 Q. I'm going to --

4 **A. Hurley stick is a bit awkward.**

5 Q. I'm going to come to that. Don't worry. What you
6 describe happening is you were on your knees. Is that
7 right?

8 **A. Yes, kneeling down with my hands out, and then the more**
9 **she hits, the more your hands drop and the fingers turn.**

10 Q. On the subject of the hurley stick you are aware --
11 I was saying to you earlier -- that the Sisters of
12 Nazareth have said sometimes physical punishment went
13 beyond what it should, but they aren't aware of others
14 complaining about hurley sticks being used, and they
15 don't accept hurley sticks were used. What -- as
16 I understand it, what you are explaining is it was the
17 handle of a hurley stick.

18 **A. Yes.**

19 Q. It didn't have the playing end on it --

20 **A. No.**

21 Q. -- but you are very clear for you it was a hurley stick
22 --

23 **A. Yes.**

24 Q. -- handle part --

25 **A. Yes.**

1 Q. -- and that that was used to hit you on the hands.

2 A. Yes.

3 Q. You explain in your Statement of Claim -- I am not going
4 to bring this up -- it is from 2011 -- but at 1606 --
5 that you counted 66 strikes --

6 A. Yes.

7 Q. -- before you lost count of the number of times you were
8 being hit.

9 A. Yes, because I was -- I was fighting a battle in my
10 mind: "I can't say I done that", because I hadn't done
11 it. So it became just me and her sort of thing.
12 Actually I didn't feel the physical pain, because it was
13 so -- so much thinking, "I'm going to win this. I'm
14 going to win this".

15 Q. You explain in paragraph 4, HIA192, that you lost over
16 the next few weeks five fingernails --

17 A. Yes.

18 Q. -- as a result of that particular beating.

19 A. Yes.

20 Q. You say in your police statement -- I am not going to
21 bring it up for this reason -- but at SNB-61219, which
22 you made in December 2010, you say that that was the
23 worst beating that you had when you were in the home.

24 A. Yes.

25 Q. There are other beatings that we are going to talk about

PRIVATE

hoover, and large wooden tweezers you used for washing. I used to cower behind the washing machine and tumble dryer to try and hide from her. She was such a fierce woman. She used whatever she could get her hands on to hit me. She hit me across the head with the shaft of the brush. This happened once or twice a week and I was often bruised.

4. One of the worst things was when **SR 62** hit you around the head with her keys. She used to stick the long key into your jaw bone really hard and that was so sore. It seemed just as bad as getting beaten. She was very vindictive. There was another boy with a surname **SR 62** there too. I remember he had not been in the home for long and I saw **SR 62** hit him with a dust pan brush. No-one ever saw what happened to me because **SR 62** always did it in private.

5. There were five groups of fifteen children. I remember in my group there was **NL 56** and **NL 57** **NL 97** and **NL 33** and **NL 145** We were in **SR 62** group. Some of the other staff in our group were **NL 66** **NL 146** **NL 32** and **NL 147** I was known as **SR 62** pet but it was terrible. No-one would want to be her pet and I think the other boys were jealous. It was very lonely and I didn't have any close friends. In our group we stuck up for each other. If you did something wrong **SR 62** would make you stand in front of a picture of Jesus and swear you didn't break an ornament for example. No one would admit it because we all knew we would get beaten for it. We all got punished in the end. I remember **SR 29** was in charge of one of the other groups.

6. It was thought that your mother coming to visit messed with your mind. My mother came to visit once but I found that very hard to understand. Part of me realised I had a mother and the other part didn't really want a mother. It was not encouraged for family to visit the home.

PRIVATE

JHIA REF: 210

Witness Name: HIA 210

THE INQUIRY INTO HISTORICAL INSTITUTIONAL ABUSE 1922 TO 1995

WITNESS STATEMENT OF HIA 210

I, HIA 210 will say as follows:-

Personal details

1. I was born on [REDACTED] in Altnagelvin Hospital in Derry. I have six brothers and six sisters. My brothers [REDACTED] SND 430 and [REDACTED] are younger than me. [REDACTED] DL 307 and SPT 22 are older than me. I only know the names of three of my six sisters, and they are [REDACTED] [REDACTED] and [REDACTED]. The last time I saw my mother and father was in 1993, and I could count on one hand the times I have seen them.

Nazareth Lodge, Belfast (26th September 1973 – 15th August 1981)

2. I think I went into Nazareth House Portadown as a baby. I was transferred from there to Nazareth Lodge Belfast when I was four years old. My brother [REDACTED] was there too but we didn't really get along. I had a heart murmur and can remember lots of medical equipment there in my early years. I don't remember any other details at that stage.
3. I went to school in Nazareth Lodge and that was a terrible time for me. SR 62 [REDACTED] SR 62 who I believe is now deceased, would beat me hard if I was thrown out of the class. She used to beat me with brush shafts, metal parts of the

PRIVATE

hoover, and large wooden tweezers you used for washing. I used to cower behind the washing machine and tumble dryer to try and hide from her. She was such a fierce woman. She used whatever she could get her hands on to hit me. She hit me across the head with the shaft of the brush. This happened once or twice a week and I was often bruised.

4. One of the worst things was when **SR 62** hit you around the head with her keys. She used to stick the long key into your jaw bone really hard and that was so sore. It seemed just as bad as getting beaten. She was very vindictive. There was another boy with a surname **SR 62** there too. I remember he had not been in the home for long and I saw **SR 62** hit him with a dust pan brush. No-one ever saw what happened to me because **SR 62** always did it in private.

5. There were five groups of fifteen children. I remember in my group there was **NL 56** and **NL 57** **NL 97** and **NL 33** and **NL 145** We were in **SR 62** group. Some of the other staff in our group were **NL 66** **NL 146** **NL 32** and **NL 147** I was known as **SR 62** pet but it was terrible. No-one would want to be her pet and I think the other boys were jealous. It was very lonely and I didn't have any close friends. In our group we stuck up for each other. If you did something wrong **SR 62** would make you stand in front of a picture of Jesus and swear you didn't break an ornament for example. No one would admit it because we all knew we would get beaten for it. We all got punished in the end. I remember **SR 29** was in charge of one of the other groups.

6. It was thought that your mother coming to visit messed with your mind. My mother came to visit once but I found that very hard to understand. Part of me realised I had a mother and the other part didn't really want a mother. It was not encouraged for family to visit the home.

1 else it might have been in their statement.

2 One other nun that you complained to police about
3 when you spoke to them was an SR9.

4 **A. Yes.**

5 Q. That statement and the relevant reference can be found
6 at SNB-32244. Do you remember telling -- do you
7 remember that nun?

8 **A. Yes, big tall nun.**

9 Q. What can you say about her?

10 **A. She wasn't bad. She wasn't good, but she wasn't as bad
11 as the other two.**

12 Q. Another thing that you told police in that statement --
13 and I should tell the Inquiry that you brought some
14 notes to the Inquiry this morning after you read over
15 your statement --

16 **A. Yes.**

17 Q. -- in preparation for coming here. In those notes you
18 added something that you told the police, which was
19 about the nuns placing your hands in cold water before
20 they hit you.

21 **A. Yes.**

22 Q. If we look at that, that's at 32244. This is just
23 a page. You spoke to the police in England -- isn't
24 that right, HIA89 -- in 2007?

25 **A. Yes.**

1 Q. If we can just scroll down there, you are describing the
2 nuns that you remember, and you remember, if I can just
3 take there:

4 "I remember beatings by SR118, SR100 and SR9. SR100
5 and SR9, they would use what I describe as a hurley
6 stick. The sisters would make me fold my thumb into the
7 palm of my hand, then strike me using the stick. This
8 would be on my left hand, my natural writing hand, and
9 beatings would come when I had not learnt what I should
10 have done properly or correctly from my studies or my
11 writing was wrong. I cannot remember specific times or
12 dates when this occurred, due to the amount of time that
13 has passed, but I definitely remember the beatings
14 taking place. I remember how the Sisters used to get us
15 to place our hands in cold water. Then they would hit
16 us with whatever object they had, usually a cane or
17 a stick. The beatings would happen to everyone who
18 lived in the home, not just me. Also what stands out in
19 my mind is how we were made to stand in the corner naked
20 in front of approximately 30 other residents as a
21 punishment and then be beaten. I cannot name anyone in
22 particular for the beatings that occurred like this."

23 Then you also talk in that police statement -- if we
24 could just scroll on down to the next page, please, you
25 talk about the incident with SR149. You say:

1 else it might have been in their statement.

2 One other nun that you complained to police about
3 when you spoke to them was an SR9.

4 **A. Yes.**

5 Q. That statement and the relevant reference can be found
6 at SNB-32244. Do you remember telling -- do you
7 remember that nun?

8 **A. Yes, big tall nun.**

9 Q. What can you say about her?

10 **A. She wasn't bad. She wasn't good, but she wasn't as bad
11 as the other two.**

12 Q. Another thing that you told police in that statement --
13 and I should tell the Inquiry that you brought some
14 notes to the Inquiry this morning after you read over
15 your statement --

16 **A. Yes.**

17 Q. -- in preparation for coming here. In those notes you
18 added something that you told the police, which was
19 about the nuns placing your hands in cold water before
20 they hit you.

21 **A. Yes.**

22 Q. If we look at that, that's at 32244. This is just
23 a page. You spoke to the police in England -- isn't
24 that right, HIA89 -- in 2007?

25 **A. Yes.**

1 Q. If we can just scroll down there, you are describing the
2 nuns that you remember, and you remember, if I can just
3 take there:

4 "I remember beatings by SR118, SR100 and SR9. SR100
5 and SR9, they would use what I describe as a hurley
6 stick. The sisters would make me fold my thumb into the
7 palm of my hand, then strike me using the stick. This
8 would be on my left hand, my natural writing hand, and
9 beatings would come when I had not learnt what I should
10 have done properly or correctly from my studies or my
11 writing was wrong. I cannot remember specific times or
12 dates when this occurred, due to the amount of time that
13 has passed, but I definitely remember the beatings
14 taking place. I remember how the Sisters used to get us
15 to place our hands in cold water. Then they would hit
16 us with whatever object they had, usually a cane or
17 a stick. The beatings would happen to everyone who
18 lived in the home, not just me. Also what stands out in
19 my mind is how we were made to stand in the corner naked
20 in front of approximately 30 other residents as a
21 punishment and then be beaten. I cannot name anyone in
22 particular for the beatings that occurred like this."

23 Then you also talk in that police statement -- if we
24 could just scroll on down to the next page, please, you
25 talk about the incident with SR149. You say:

PRIVATE

dormitory. They had their own rooms beside the dorm and took the night duty in turn. If they could not see which boy was talking they would beat every boy in the dorm as punishment.

13. I was abused by two other boys in Nazareth Lodge. They were called **NL 46** and **NL 47**. I cannot recall their first names. I was about 9 years old and they would have been around 14 or 15.
14. **NL 46** made me go to his bed and he tried to get me to put my hand on his private parts. I started screaming and ran away from him.
15. Around six months later **NL 47** tried to get me to do the same thing. Again I screamed and ran away.
16. After both these incidents **NL 46** and **NL 47** physically abused me. They slapped and punched me whenever they felt like it because I didn't do what they wanted. They bullied me and made my life hell. I didn't tell anyone because no one would have believed me and nothing would have been done. I do not know what became of these two boys.
17. It was my job to take up a large jug of hot water up to an old nun called **SR 149**. **SR 149** She looked after the chapel. It was unbelievable the abuse that woman made me suffer. She used to beat me with a whip.
18. I remember I was late with the water one afternoon and she hit me across the face with her crutch. The boiling water from the jug went all over my body and hands and scalded me. I was taken to the Mater hospital and I was kept in for about 2 or 3 weeks.
19. On another occasion **SR 149** pushed me down the stairs and I broke my arm. I spent about 3 or 4 weeks in the Mater hospital following this incident. No one asked me how the injuries happened on either occasion. I was between 7 and 11 years old.

5. With regard to paragraph 8, [REDACTED] has identified the chore of cleaning a large Terrazzo corridor. While the Congregation do accept that the children were given chores to do, we do not accept that these chores were excessive and would have been appropriate to their age.
6. With regard to paragraph 13, [REDACTED] has discussed abuse amongst the children in the home. The sexual abuse of children that were in our care has only come to light in recent years. The Sisters are horrified, shocked and devastated that this abuse took place and offer a most sincere and profound apology to any child that suffered this horrendous act.
7. With regard to paragraph 16, [REDACTED] has stated the peer abuse he suffered at the hands of [REDACTED] and [REDACTED]. When there are so many children of different ages together disputes will arise. Bullying was not accepted or tolerated by the Sisters and if [REDACTED] suffered bullying or peer abuse of any sort, we do believe this to be wholly unacceptable.
8. With regard to paragraphs 18 and 19, we do not have any records of this incident nor do we have any medical records for [REDACTED]. This incident may have occurred however we do not believe this would have been as described.
9. With regard to paragraph 20, the Congregation can only apologise for the separation in [REDACTED] family as the facilities in Nazareth Lodge catered only for boys until the early 1970's. The Congregation endeavoured to maintain sibling relationships and it was a common occurrence for the children to visit their siblings whenever possible.
10. With regard to paragraph 22, the Congregation believe the children were provided with the best clothing available to the Congregation at the time. Clothing from outside sources and 'hand me downs' were normal within Nazareth Lodge and would also have occurred within the community and familial home. We do not accept that [REDACTED] would have only worn shorts until he was 10 or 12 years old. It is possible shorts were part of his school uniform but we cannot comment on this.
11. It is a matter of deep regret that any child resident under the care of the Sisters of Nazareth did not feel loved, valued or cared for. With regards to [REDACTED] statement, the Congregation would like to express their hurt and sadness at the allegations identified. The Congregation have always endeavoured to provide a safe and loving home for children of various backgrounds and must offer [REDACTED] an unreserved and

1 Q. You say there that you got beaten for things such as not
2 doing what the nuns asked you to do; for example, if you
3 didn't clean the floor to the nuns' satisfaction. You
4 say you were hit on the palms of your hands and your
5 backside. The nuns would use sticks, straps, hurley
6 sticks, anything they got their hands on, and you name
7 two nuns here, SR118 and SR100, who beat you the most.

8 Now I have explained to you that we have given
9 designations to them, but just so you are clear that
10 these two designations related to SR118 and SR100 --

11 **A. Yes.**

12 Q. -- whose names are not to be used outside of this
13 chamber.

14 CHAIRMAN: Just a moment. It is a little difficult to hear
15 what you are saying, HIA89. Could we have that
16 microphone moved closer to you, please?

17 **A. No, I can hear.**

18 CHAIRMAN: No, no, it is us having difficulty hearing what
19 you are saying.

20 **A. Oh, I see. I am sorry.**

21 CHAIRMAN: So if you would just keep the microphone close to
22 you, please.

23 MS SMITH: As I said, those are the names of the two nuns we
24 are talking about, but they are not to be used outside,
25 HIA89.

1 Q. Paragraphs 17 to 19 you talk about a different nun and
2 this was SR149. Now she was not someone who was in
3 charge of the children. Her job was to look after the
4 chapel. Isn't that right?

5 **A. Yes.**

6 Q. In your police statement at SNB-32244 that is what you
7 told them about her, that she was the nun in charge of
8 the chapel. You say it was your job to take up a large
9 jug of hot water to her.

10 "It was unbelievable the abuse that that woman made
11 me suffer. She used to beat me with a whip. I remember
12 I was late with the water one afternoon and she hit me
13 across the face with her crutch. The boiling water from
14 the jug went all over my body and hands and scalded me.
15 I was taken to the Mater Hospital and I was kept in for
16 two or three weeks."

17 **A. Correct.**

18 Q. Now I did ask you about this, HIA89, and you said that
19 at the time your hands were badly burnt.

20 **A. Yes.**

21 Q. The scars over the years have healed, though. There is
22 nothing to show now, and we have -- certainly we have no
23 medical evidence about it, and you did say that your
24 solicitor had felt that the medical records probably
25 were no longer in existence.

PRIVATE

5. I remember that the floors in the dormitories were wooden and we would constantly get skelps on our feet. We never got treated for them and eventually they put in plastic tiles.
6. ,The bully boys were older they caned and whipped us with plastic bats.
7. The Sisters had a big stick and if you were bad they would whack you over the knuckles put you in the corridor, open the windows and get you to kneel in the corridor until your knees were sore. The stick was about half an inch thick. **SR 47** did this to me on a regular basis during my time in the home.
8. The food in the home was awful. We got cornflakes in a block with no milk I think they may have put water in it. The spaghetti also came in a block. Supper was bread and they would get a big pot of fat that was nearly cold and dip the bread into it then throw it on our plates.
9. I was always hungry in the home. There was a bin yard out the back and I used to take bread from the bins to eat it. There would sometimes be a fire lit to burn rubbish and I would toast the bread and eat it.
10. We always had chores to do and once I got thrown into a big boiler room with a chimney and I was told to clean it inside. I was probably only nine or ten at the time. It was all soot and I was given a wire brush to clean I imagine that my lungs were probably black from all the work. I wasn't given a mask or protective gear I was just told to clean.
11. On a Saturday we would have to polish the floors. They would put the wax down maybe about half an inch thick and you had to take your shoes off and put dusters on your feet. Each child had a certain part of the floor to do and we had to keep going until we could nearly see our faces in the floor. The nuns would stand over us supervising.

1 bathroom, we cleaned them and looked after them,
2 everything. We prepared them -- helped to prepare the
3 food, you know, likes of peeling potatoes, doing manual
4 jobs about the place. Everybody had a job to do. Maybe
5 some boys were sent to split kindling for the fires and
6 different jobs, you know.

7 I was detailed off to go into the children's bit
8 where they had a laundry and I was working in the
9 laundry, and then earlier I was working out in the
10 garden out the front, and, you know, I'm explaining it
11 to you. You know, they didn't have the staff to run the
12 place, but they were getting the place looked after.

13 Q. You describe in paragraph 19 a particular physical
14 assault that you recall. You remember going into the
15 school and becoming aware that in one of the classrooms
16 in the cages mice or perhaps you think they might have
17 been hamsters were dead, and you went back over to the
18 main building to tell SR118 about that. She blamed you
19 and got the belt to you, you were explaining to me
20 earlier, and started to wallop you with the belt.

21 A. Well, let me explain to you. The classroom I am on
22 about was across from the home across the playing
23 fields. It was a big classroom and it had a main
24 classroom and two side rooms and a toilet block. I was
25 put in charge of that to look after it and clean it, and

1 these animals were brought in in a cage and we had the
2 -- you know, must have been given to them. I went in
3 one morning and they were lying dead. I went across to
4 SR118 and told her they were dead, and she blamed me for
5 killing them. So the next thing was she got the belt
6 out and I got a hammering. Now I wouldn't cry.
7 I wouldn't let her see me cry. So that got the better
8 of her. So she started on me again and then she got
9 NL85, which is the headmaster in the classroom, he come
10 across and gave me a hammering and my hands swoll up
11 till the blood was coming out of them.

12 Q. While SR118 used the belt on you, what you are talking
13 about with NL85, he used the cane --

14 A. That's right.

15 Q. -- hitting you on the hands.

16 A. Uh-huh.

17 Q. That was his form of -- you said to me you thought you
18 were about 12 at that stage, older and given some
19 responsibility for that particular part of the school in
20 terms of cleaning and so on, and that's how you came to
21 know about the pets that had died.

22 A. Uh-huh. That's true.

23 Q. You then describe in paragraph 19 the results of, as
24 I understand it, you threatened to run away and the way
25 of dealing with you then was to put you in the top floor

1 of the Nazareth Lodge, and they locked the corridor
2 doors at each end of the corridor and put you in
3 a single room, and you were not locked in that room, but
4 you were locked in the corridor as a whole during the
5 day. At night there were also dorms on this corridor,
6 this floor that were used by the groups of boys at
7 night-time, but during the day you were locked in this
8 place and your meals were brought up to you, and you
9 felt you were there for two to three days.

10 **A. That's true.**

11 Q. You think that because you threatened to run away, this
12 was their way of making sure you didn't.

13 **A. Well, I now know that that was the reason why I was put**
14 **in there, because, as I explained in my statement, I was**
15 **going to run away, and I explained to you I wasn't going**
16 **to do the normal route, and I knew where I was going to**
17 **go, but then when I seen what happened to other boys in**
18 **the place, I thought better.**

19 Q. As you were explaining to me, boys who ran away were
20 physically punished in front of the group as a means, as
21 you look on it now, of trying to encourage people not to
22 run away.

23 **A. That's true.**

24 Q. You were explaining to me then when you were released
25 from that top floor, as it were, you were given a shadow

PRIVATE

the ear and hit them with the belt that she wore around her waist. If a boy wet himself she would make him lie down face first and she would wallop him across the body. If you coughed in the Chapel she would have brought you out in front of everyone to give you a wallop. **SR 118** also had her head boys who would go around with sticks to give us thumpings. On other occasions we were made to strip off and were beaten about the bottom by **SR 118**

17. There was nobody that I could talk to about what was happening in the home. If we went to confession and told the Priest or complained to him, he would tell the nuns and we would have received another beating, either from the nuns or from the older boys. We would be hit with brush shafts or belts. I had a bit of a rebellious streak and spoke my mind. I believe that the nuns wanted to break my spirit. The older boys must have felt that they were getting glory from hitting us, because they acted like they had power over us. Some of these boys had been institutionalised since they were infants, so they did not know any different. It was a way of life for them. I recall that one of the older boys was called **HIA 192** **HIA 192** was an evil boy, and regularly hit me. I woke up some mornings after being battered in my bed at night, and there was often blood on my pillow. I cannot really blame the other boys because they did not know any better, I can only blame the people that were administering the rules and regulations. I had seen freedom and kindness with the **SR 118** who would have corrected me and told me off if I was bad, but they never hit me.

18. When we were taken out on our Sunday walks to Ormeau Park it was like an open jail. We were dressed in our Sunday best and we had to be on our best behaviour. We were not allowed to talk to anyone, nor were we allowed to stop or play. The discipline did not stop when we left the home; it applied as long as you were in the group of boys. It was like we were prisoners.

19. One morning when I was cleaning the classroom I noticed that the pet mice were lying dead in their cages. I went back over to the main building and told **SR 118** but she accused me of killing them. **SR 118** beat

PRIVATE

me, and I lost my temper and called her something bad, so she gave me another hammering. **NL 85** came and gave me a caning until the blood was coming out of my hands. I was locked away in solitary confinement for two weeks because I told them that I was going to run away. I was put into a room on the second floor that was otherwise used if one of the boys was ill. I was brought my food and when I cooled down I was allowed out again to play. I received no medical treatment for my injuries, nor do I remember a doctor or dentist seeing us at the home.

20. I remember **SR 157** being more lenient than **SR 118** but even she had to watch who she could show affection to, and when. **SR 157** was a kind woman, but she could be strict. Before I left the home the nuns started a tuck shop and they used to give us about a sixpence occasionally that we could spend in the shop. Myself and 3 other boys would be taken by a nun to a pitch on the Falls Road to play hurly with other schools.

21. I finished school when I was 13, because the nuns had jobs for me to do around the home. I was put into the children's section of Nazareth Lodge to help look after the younger children. I was given a class of about 20 boys to look after, with jobs like making sure they were awake on time in the morning, and getting them washed and dressed. Later I was moved to help in the laundry. I was also required to help prepare the vegetables in the kitchen from time to time. We had to work wherever we were needed at any particular time. Finally, I was put to work in the garden. We grew vegetables in the garden, and because I was brought up in the country I was responsible for picking them. When I worked in the garden one of the nuns gave me a mug of tea and two slices of fried bread as a treat.

22. We were constantly hungry in the home; it was like a passenger with us all the time. We could not ask for more food if we were hungry. There was as little heating as they could get away with putting on and a blanket for the beds rather than duvets, so we were not warm in the home either. We were given overalls to wear, and I believe that **SR 118** used to make them. Sister **SR 118** made me learn how to make socks along with my other duties. We

PRIVATE

HIA REF: 427

Witness Name: HIA 427

THE INQUIRY INTO HISTORICAL INSTITUTIONAL ABUSE 1922 TO 1995

WITNESS STATEMENT OF HIA 427

I, HIA 427 will say as follows:-

Personal details

1. I was born on [REDACTED]. I have never had any direct or indirect contact with my biological parents since being placed in care.

St Joseph's Baby Home, Ravenhill Road, Belfast (1944 – 1 September 1949)

2. I was sent as a baby to stay in St Joseph's Baby Home, Ravenhill Road, Belfast and I stayed there for the first five years of my life. I was then moved to Nazareth Lodge in Belfast when I was five years old.

Nazareth Lodge, Belfast (1 September 1949 – 20 August 1956)

3. There were approximately forty boys in Nazareth Lodge. We stayed in dormitories and there were about twelve children in each dormitory.
4. At Nazareth Lodge I was subjected to regular physical assaults. If you did not greet a nun properly you got a slap on the face, your hair pulled or you would be lifted up by the ears.

HIA 427

PRIVATE

1

PRIVATE

5. My memory of Nazareth Lodge is that the nuns kicked and beat us, cut and shaved our hair and used Jeyes fluid to clean us. A frequent punishment was to make you clean the floors of the home with a hand scrubber.
6. I recall going to school at that time but it was a waste of time. We could not learn as we lived in constant fear and felt nervous all the time which was not conducive to learning. I was always afraid of being given a hiding or being kicked by the nuns or teachers. I would spend my time looking at the walls in school as I was always fearful and anxious. There were also a lot of rough children at the school. I decided I was not going to let them beat me so I always got on with my life.
7. I remember feeling hungry during my time at Nazareth Lodge and not getting much food.
8. You were not allowed to leave the grounds of the Lodge. If you sneaked out the nuns would give you a serious beating.
9. There were four nuns who were particularly cruel to me, **SR 100** Sister **SR 151** **SR 34** and **SR 118**. These nuns carried out most of the assaults on me. **SR 34** was in the cell in my dormitory, she would have insisted my trousers were taken down when I was being strapped for wetting the bed. After she threw the wet and dirty sheets over me I was subjected to cold baths.
10. Another very cruel nun was **SR 100**. She was very rough and loved hitting me. She strapped me on the bench and hit me with her fist and on the head with her knuckles. She would hit me on the hands first and then put my hands on the bench and hit the back of my hand with her knuckles. If she missed my hands she would hit me across the legs. I was hit with a black strap, sticks or sometimes with a more flexible stick like a cane. You would be too afraid to even look at her.

PRIVATE

5. My memory of Nazareth Lodge is that the nuns kicked and beat us, cut and shaved our hair and used Jeyes fluid to clean us. A frequent punishment was to make you clean the floors of the home with a hand scrubber.
6. I recall going to school at that time but it was a waste of time. We could not learn as we lived in constant fear and felt nervous all the time which was not conducive to learning. I was always afraid of being given a hiding or being kicked by the nuns or teachers. I would spend my time looking at the walls in school as I was always fearful and anxious. There were also a lot of rough children at the school. I decided I was not going to let them beat me so I always got on with my life.
7. I remember feeling hungry during my time at Nazareth Lodge and not getting much food.
8. You were not allowed to leave the grounds of the Lodge. If you sneaked out the nuns would give you a serious beating.
9. There were four nuns who were particularly cruel to me, **SR 100** Sister **SR 151** **SR 34** and **SR 118**. These nuns carried out most of the assaults on me. **SR 34** was in the cell in my dormitory, she would have insisted my trousers were taken down when I was being strapped for wetting the bed. After she threw the wet and dirty sheets over me I was subjected to cold baths.
10. Another very cruel nun was **SR 100**. She was very rough and loved hitting me. She strapped me on the bench and hit me with her fist and on the head with her knuckles. She would hit me on the hands first and then put my hands on the bench and hit the back of my hand with her knuckles. If she missed my hands she would hit me across the legs. I was hit with a black strap, sticks or sometimes with a more flexible stick like a cane. You would be too afraid to even look at her.

PRIVATE

has caused me enormous grief as well as communication and employment problems resulting in financial hardship my entire life.

7. A particularly bleak and miserable experience in Nazareth Lodge occurred when I was about seven or eight years old. I think I had measles, mumps or chicken pox and I was left alone in isolation for days. I never saw a doctor and apart from food being brought in and left for me, nobody spoke to me or gave me any care or comfort. I felt profound despair, fear and loneliness. I still feel haunted by that period. One day I was playing on the merry-go-round at Nazareth Lodge when one of the wood swings which was broken swung into my face and cut me just below my right eye. I still have a scar to this day. I never saw a doctor or nurse whilst in the Lodge.
8. One of the most painful punishments dished out by the nuns was the beating of my fingertips with a wooden ruler. The nuns would grab my hand and squeeze the fingers all bunched up together until they went red and then strike them across the fingertips with a ruler. The pain was terrible and it was done with viciousness especially in winter when our hands were so cold, so they could inflict the greatest pain and generate fear.
9. **SR 34** was the most terrifying nun at Nazareth Lodge. She was an aggressive bully and she was the biggest nun. She was always yelling at the children and punching us with closed fists. She also boxed our ears. She had a nasty, angry face and seeing her coming up the corridor made you shrink back against the wall to try and not be noticed. **SR 152** seemed kinder but she was upstairs with the big boys and I didn't see her very much. She was more of a friend to us and taught us how to play rounders. She appeared to be more modern than the other nuns and maybe she knew that the way we were being treated was not right.
10. During one particular incident **SR 71** belted me with her fists and for weeks afterwards slapped me about and shouted at me every time she saw me. In the Lodge we all watched a Paul Robeson film about slavery. One day some visitors came in to Nazareth Lodge while two others and I were on our hands

PRIVATE

back to Nazareth Lodge. This was in 1973. We were in court twice at this time. We were split up again as a family and this was actually the last time we were together as a family. I was taken to the top floor and the nun was called Sister **SR 47**. She left Nazareth Lodge and was replaced by **SR 153** who went to Derry. Then she was replaced by **SR 30** from South Africa. She was strict and very religious. I laughed at another boy **DL 20** who made faces and she sent us to our bedroom and put me to bed with no food (psychological). I remember on one occasion she slapped me on the face from behind, knocking me into the wardrobe. She had slapped me from behind. This was for no reason at all a bad tempered woman. Another time she gave me a beating for swapping an alter duty with another boy called **DL 55** he told me to do it. **DL 31** his brother were the two boys supposed to do it. She beat me with her hands. And cut my hair to humiliate me. I had chores to do every morning which progressed onto me doing the front door parlour. I work full time outside of school. This involved contacting the nuns when someone called at the door or someone rang. Brushing the grounds, feeding beggars, seeing to priests and much more until 10 o'clock every night when I locked the gates. I did this for around a couple of years. It was whilst doing this job that I would have met visiting priests who would sometimes have stayed over in the bedroom to the right of the door as you enter. I took over the job from **NL 55**. It was here that I first met Father Brendan Smyth. I was about 10 ½ years old at this time. Within 5 minutes he abused me. I remember him coming to the door. I carried some items from his car. When he opened the boot of his car I could see sweets and money, both paper and coins in a pile, stacked. I took items for him into his bedroom and he had given me a pile of sweets. As I was eating the sweets he proceeded to be affectionate to me. He stood behind me and put his hands on my backside and my bum and privates when he played with me. He had his hands inside my clothing. This type of abuse took place on several visits from Brendan Smyth. Father Brendan Smyth was like a Santa Claus figure. It was the first time I had been shown any affection from a Priest. He was not violent in any way. All the kids liked him, he gave us money and sweets. The abuse from Brendan Smyth progressed, on other occasions he took his penis out and had me fondle him. He done the same to me. This was at the front

PRIVATE

and I ran into one of the bedrooms where she cornered me. She bent me down over the bed and twisted my arm that I heard a wrench and she was screaming for me to apologise. The wrench was like a muscle tearing in my upper arm and it seemed like she was going to break my arm. I had no choice but to say sorry to her. To this day my left arm has been physically affected by this. I still find it painful lifting my left arm. I think I was about 11 or 12 when this happened.

17. When [REDACTED] SR 30 [REDACTED] came to Nazareth Lodge. She was one of the youngest nuns there approx 35 years old. We got on well. So did a few other girls in my group on the top floor. Her word was law. She was like Julie Andrews in the Sound of Music except she had a vicious temper and punished menial things with prolonged punishment.
18. She had me looking after to front parlour door from I was around just over 10 years old. I was smart and practical and full of life.
19. This trusted job included anyone came to Nazareth Lodge they went through me by phone or ringing the bell at the front door. Anyone.
20. There were 4 parlour rooms there and a kitchen. It was boring at times but I did everything to please her. She installed an intercom system which went to the top floor this was particularly to see that when a priest phoned "her brother" she could be contacted ASAP. I went for meals in hotels when he came with both of them. There was the Nazareth Lodge phone it had an exchange button to buzz the nuns eating quarters on the 1st floor. I contacted [REDACTED] NL 5 [REDACTED] who had a group of children she abused on the ground floor and she was very friendly with Father Brendan Smyth who abused some of the kids. Two I've come to know were the [REDACTED]s in her group.
21. This is how I met Father Brendan Smyth. He slept in the bedroom to the right as

1 want to stay in touch, please do. I'd love to. I'd
2 like you to meet my family. So that's an invite."

3 Then you go on for the rest of that letter, HIA41,
4 to basically quote from the bible and try to persuade --

5 A. Well, I was counteracting all of the decades of the
6 rosary and getting us out of bed and kneeling and all of
7 this stuff, and I explained to her that none of this was
8 in the bible, because she made you clearly understand
9 how to write a sentence and how to write a word. So it
10 was fascinating for me to say, 'This doesn't say this
11 here', you know.

12 Q. Uh-huh.

13 A. That was the conversation. She always talked about
14 religion and she always had us doing decades of the
15 rosary and things like that. She was very, very Roman
16 Catholic in her way. So that was tied to that.

17 The part where you say "to meet my wife", my wife
18 .

19 Q. Uh-huh.

20 A. I did not know this when I met my wife. I met her at
21 a dance over at Queen's University. A lot of country
22 girls came in the '80s and
23 that's where I met her. So she knew SR30 and SR208
24 quite well and was telling me of their antics and their
25 carrying on and the sort of -- you know, they dressed up

PRIVATE

out to anyone's homes who wanted them for any reason unvetted and was warned by social services never to do that, most of what I speak of are on my social services record which I had a mountain to climb to get them. Sister **SR 30** flogged a boy naked. **DL 55** for pulling his pyjamas down, with a stick. (I saw it) and all the boys in the bedroom. It was witnessed by **NL 54**

31. The sisters had an endless supply of wealth and the food and clothing were excellent in our group. Same food in all other groups. Some of the nuns were quite good. **SR 29** **SR 157** **SR 149** **SR 71** **SR 155** **SR 154** **SR 30** and a blind nun. Our group was renovated to hotel standard. 3 beds, and single bed en suite bedrooms. Top class. I had total freedom because of my relationship with **SR 30** I went anywhere I wanted and did what I liked, Ormo scouts, camping in Dublin, stayed in school friend's house. In my social services record it is recorded how **SR 46** was pressurising my social worker to get rid of me. She was jealous of my relationship with Sister **SR 30** and the life I had and was determined to put an end to it and she did. Anything I wanted **SR 30** gave to me, money, budgies, canaries, mice, goldfish. ANYTHING!!

De La Salle Boys' Home, Rubane House, Kircubbin (06/05/1977 – 23/05/1980)

32. I left Nazareth Lodge when I was 13 years old and was moved to Kircubbin to the De La Salle Boys Home. I was taken there by a social worker, **NL 187** she had been my social worker for a few years. I was deceived and coerced into going to De La Salle from Nazareth Lodge by 2 new sisters, **SR 156** and **SR 46** who beat and tortured me and coerced social services to do this by phone. I believe that I was moved to De La Salle because I had been running away from Nazareth Lodge because of the way I was treated there. I remember the day I was taken to the De La Salle I cried all day. When I arrived at De La Salle I was introduced to **BR 2** He was the head brother at De La Salle. I was then taken to chalet one where there were around

PRIVATE

9. My sister was in Primary Five and I just sat and cuddled her all the time. She didn't learn and I didn't learn. I don't recall ever lifting a pencil. I always felt a sense of rejection be it in the home or in the school.
10. On the way to and from school we had to pass the Nursery. My wee brother was in the Nursery and I pined for him. I wanted to see him but we were never allowed to be together. I could see him playing outside and wanted to be near him. I would have done anything to get out of P1.
11. The nuns did not have any child care skills or understanding of children. They did not know how to show us love or comfort us. I found out in later years that they were being paid to care for us. I am still angry with Social Services as it was their duty to make sure our physical, emotional and educational needs were being met by the Sisters of Nazareth but they didn't do this.
12. The care worker in charge of my group in Nazareth Lodge was called **NL 155** I don't know how she ever came to work with children. I can only describe her as an animal who should never have been allowed to work with children. We were petrified of her. I don't recall playing very much in the home. We just sat and watched TV afraid to move from our chairs. I always felt frightened and to this day I am still frightened of authority.
13. **NL 155** was a very lazy woman. I recall an occasion when a fruit man came into the home. He had a big box of fruit and we all jumped up to greet him. She was ever so nice to him and when he left she made us get down and polish the floors before we would get any of the fruit. She said to us, "You are not getting any fruit until you polish that floor."
14. The routine in the home was very strict. We were like robots. We were afraid to speak and we were told where to sit and what to do. We had to make our beds and stand until they were inspected. I remember being sick all the time and nobody comforting me. I always felt nervous and anxious and as a result I soiled myself a lot. I have suffered with IBS all of my life and I believe it is as a result of the conditions in the home.

PRIVATE

SR 52 was in charge. SR 52 was a lovely nun. There were some nice nuns and some wicked nuns.

6. NL 4 was the civilian member of staff in charge of our group. She was left in charge of us whenever the nuns were at prayers or in care meetings. She was a wicked one. I used to wet the bed sometimes and she would grab your face and rub your nose in the soiled sheets. She would beat me as well with her hands or with whatever object she had to hand. She took a stick to my hands. You didn't have to do anything wrong to be beaten by NL 4. She just constantly beat you for nothing. On one occasion, she stripped me and another girl to our pants and locked us in the dining room. It was freezing cold. She also forced us to wash in cold water. I still remember the smell of the Jeyes fluid from the bath. I saw other children getting beaten by NL 4.
7. Another staff member called NL 14 used to chase me and hit me. He did gardening and odd jobs around the Lodge. He was wicked. Other people said he touched children. NL 122 hit me as well – he was also a gardener/handyman. NL 5 was the staff member in charge of the little boys' group but I had nothing to do with her.
8. The food in the Lodge was really poor. I would call it slops. We got porridge but I wouldn't eat it, it made me sick. For dinner, we just got a tiny bit of meat and a bit of potato. If you didn't eat your dinner, you would be given it the next day. The cook was a lovely woman. It wasn't her fault the food was so bad; she was just doing her job. There were some lovely people in the Lodge.
9. I went to school in Harberton Park. It was alright. I could read a bit but my maths wasn't good. Before I went into the Lodge I had been going to St. Kevin's school on the .

[REDACTED] (a fiery type of person) from Newcastle was generally alright sort of person; I would have a chat and drink with her today about our times in the Lodge.

12. There were two members of staff that I need not get on with. There was NL 202 [REDACTED] who always picked on me and gave other children more rewards (sweets) than me – she always put me down. There was NL 203 [REDACTED] who was extremely strict and moody; she would slap us children when we misbehaved. When this occurred, the Sisters would not be around and the sisters would have never witnessed this from the laystaff.
13. DL 208 [REDACTED] one of the handy men, was a nasty person and a real bully - he frightened all of us children and, if we went out of bounds on the grounds, he would hit you. He hit me several times for being up near the garages. However, his work colleague NL 151 [REDACTED] was a great man.
14. Older Lodge boys also visited us on a Sunday and brought us laughter and treats; [REDACTED] (who I am still in contact today), [REDACTED] RIP, [REDACTED] (emigrated to Australia), [REDACTED] RIP, [REDACTED] and [REDACTED]. These men and their families ensured we got a presents at Christmas time. [REDACTED] also kept rabbits in the field near St Augustine's school.

Holidays in Ballyhornan, Co Down

15. Each summer we would holiday in Ballyhornan, staying in old RAF converted huts. We had a great time. The cook was wonderful and we ate well - smashed potatoes and sausages – ice cream and jelly etc. We would have visited Guns Island, played on the rocks, swam on the second beach and slid down the steep grass banks on cardboard. The RAF personnel and their open topped land rovers would drive from the various camps. Cows would go up the lane and the children would the sewer pipe into the sea etc. These are just a few memories I have of my time in Ballyhornan.
16. We also got friendly with the long term holiday makers from Belfast and attended the children's disco in the fish factory, come temporary church hall. When I return to Ireland, I always try to get to Ballyhornan. As I have already stated I visited the place in August with my two sons.

HIA REF: _____

Witness Name: **NL 122**

THE INQUIRY INTO HISTORICAL INSTITUTIONAL ABUSE 1922 TO 1995

WITNESS STATEMENT OF **NL 122****NL 122** will say as follows:-

1. I was born on [REDACTED] in the [REDACTED] area with the family name of **NL 122**. I changed the spelling of my name slightly in later life. I believe I was placed as a baby in the nursery at St Joseph's Baby Home before moving to Nazareth Lodge Home aged five years where I remained until eleven years. I then moved to Kircubbin until I was sometime around the age of sixteen years. I have no wish to discuss my own experiences in any of these homes.
2. I returned on occasion to Nazareth Lodge on Saturday mornings where I sometimes helped out a man named **NL 198** who worked as a handyman. **NL 198** retired and I secured his job. My duties were to maintain and repair the properties and facilities on site. There was also some general gardening and labouring. My immediate supervisor was **NL 11**. There were other employees there as well as me who did the same work such as **NL 200** and **NL 201**. I have no knowledge of a [REDACTED]. I never had any dealings or supervisory roles in respect of the children at the home. I have never chastised or punished any child at the home. I have read the allegations apparently naming me and I deny them absolutely.
3. I was asked to appear at a police station and had the allegations put to me. I did not bring a solicitor as I had nothing to fear from the investigation and denied the allegations to the police completely. The only explanation I can make is that the complainants are making a mistake over identification. I also believe that I never worked into nights and that the children at the home would have been at school when I was at work as I finished normally between 4.30 and 5.00 pm Monday to Friday. I had no connections to any of the children and would not even have known any of them during my employment.
4. I deny sexually or physically abusing any child at any time in any way. I deny the allegations and suggestions made by **NL 8**, **DL 40** and **HIA 48**. There is simply no truth in this and the incidents as described never occurred.

Dated this 10th day of February 2015Signed **NL 122**

PRIVATE

Joseph's for the junior boys. I was in St Joseph's dormitory and Sister **SR 118** was in charge. She had a cell at the end of the dormitory but it was the older boys who were in charge of us at night time.

4. My mother trained to be a midwife in [REDACTED] and then she got a job as a midwife in [REDACTED]. She was only able to visit me once a year in the summertime for an hour. My father did not support her in any way so I suppose she was unable to afford to visit more often as well as the fact that she worked so far away.
5. I went to school in Nazareth Lodge which was run by the nuns. If I got a bad report in school I was beaten by the nuns. There was a lay teacher called Mrs **NL 118** who had a temper. She hit me across the face with a whip once and left a terrible mark on my face. She told me to lie to the nuns if they questioned what had happened to my face and tell them that I had fallen.
6. I was always selected to sing in concerts as I was an attractive child. I would also have been selected to present boxes of chocolates to visiting nuns. One time I shared the box of chocolates with some of the other boys and I was beaten by one of the nuns with a strap for that.
7. Older boys were in charge of us. They were about fourteen or fifteen years old. At night when the boys were taking a bath the older boys were left in charge as the nuns did not come into the bathroom. That is where the sexual abuse took place. I was regularly taken into one of the toilet cubicles in the bathroom and made to perform impure acts on them. I was abused by a boy called **NL 121**.
8. I would cry in bed every night because of the abuse. I was also abused in the dormitory at night time. A boy called **NL 119** abused me. He made me perform acts on him and he performed acts on me.
9. I had a bed wetting problem. When I wet the bed I was punished the next morning by being taken to the bathroom by the older boys where they threw buckets of ice cold water over me. I then had to kneel outside Sister

PRIVATE

nice. I remember they bought me a racing set that Christmas to make up for the scalextric set which **NL 4** had taken from me.

22. I did alright at school when I was in Nazareth Lodge. There was a teacher called **NL 63** who encouraged me. In school they would have used a bamboo cane or a strap but he only caned you or strapped you if you had done something wrong. I remember he wrote a sum on the board once and said he was going to leave the room for ten minutes so we could work out the answer. When he left the room I worked out the answer on my jotter. Before he came back the class were discussing the answer and I realised my answer was different to everyone else's so I rubbed it out and wrote down the same answer as everyone else. When he came back and worked out the sum with us I realised that my first answer was actually the right answer. He asked me to wait behind after class and said he was surprised that I had not got the right answer. He asked me to show him my jotter and he saw that I had got the right answer and had rubbed it out. He gave me six of the best which would have been the normal punishment at that time. I suppose that taught me a lesson about copying.

23. I did the 11+ but no-one properly helped us to prepare for it. All I was given was two encyclopaedias a few days before the exam. I did the exam and then forgot about it. When the results came out **NL 4** gathered our group together and said she had something to tell everyone. She said we have a stupid person amongst us and told everyone that I had failed to 11+. She said to me "I was right, you are stupid after all". Calling me stupid hurt me more than any beating she could have given me.

24. When I did not pass the 11+ I knew that I would be going to Rubane. If you passed the 11+ you got to stay at Nazareth Lodge and go to grammar school in Belfast. My brother **NL 3** passed the 11+ and stayed in Nazareth Lodge until he was 16.

De La Salle Boys' Home, Rubane House, Kircubbin (20/08/1968 – 17/04/1972)

1 statement and other lay staff. There were particular
2 cruel ways of disciplining us, and one would have been
3 where the side of your lock was pulled, and one would
4 have been a crack ear, if you call it that, pull your
5 ear, but the worst of them was when you got by the
6 cheeks, and if anybody was to squeeze their own cheek
7 and see how hard they could do that, it is very, very,
8 painful, but one of the ways that would have happened
9 was if you squeezed and move your arm up, you kind of go
10 up on to your toes, your tippy-toes, and sometimes then
11 you got a slap across the face. That is something that
12 happened to a number of young people. I hadn't been
13 aware of others being force fed, for example.

14 So I would have been caned in school, for example.
15 I wouldn't have -- others were caned. So it didn't
16 matter a great deal to me. It is the things that stood
17 out in my mind.

18 Q. The type of punishment -- I am going to ask you -- you
19 did give me two names.

20 A. Yes.

21 Q. I am going to ask you to give those names to the
22 Inquiry.

23 A. Yes.

24 Q. Again they will not be repeated outside --

25 A. Yes.

PRIVATE

They both would have hit us with a stick for not doing as we were told. Sister **SR 34** was a very angry person.

4. I shared a dormitory with about twenty other boys. When we were going to bed at night **NL 5** forced us to line up and show her our underpants to see if they were clean or not and if they weren't clean we were beaten with a stick. We went to bed about 6pm every evening and we could hear the children from the other groups still out playing in the yard. We weren't allowed to go out because **NL 5** would not allow us. Our group were called the "dainties" as **NL 5** always had us washed and cleaned and didn't want us to get dirty. We were forced to lie in bed with the blanket and sheet over our heads. I could never understand why. We were sweating under those blankets and it must affect your breathing over the years. I have always had bad coughs and I suffer from asthma and I wonder whether that is why. If we didn't keep the blanket and sheet over our heads or we made any sound we were hit on the head with a stick by **SR 34** or **NL 5** who were walking around supervising us all. It never seemed right to me. It was cruel and it was scary. I was only about five or six.
5. **SR 34** also taught us at school, which was in the Lodge. When she asked a question in class we would put our hand up to answer it. The first time you put your hand up and answered a question correctly it was OK but if you put your hand up again to answer another question, regardless of whether you got it right or wrong, she would shout you down and tell you to put your hand down and stop showing off. You would be sent to the corner and told to face the wall until the end of the class. Also, if I got sums wrong **SR 34** would smack me on the face and then put me in the corner for the rest of the class. **SR 34** would also have pulled me up by the hair and pulled my cheeks. This happened on more than one occasion. It was so cruel and I felt it was a terrible upbringing.
6. There was another teacher, **NL 63**, who was very fond of the strap. He would hit me with the strap about four times per week. He taught History and English. He would pull you up by the hair if you got anything wrong. I did not

1 others are right that this occurred, were you required
2 to tell the principal that you had hit the children?

3 **A. No.**

4 Q. The last person that I am going to deal with is DL40,
5 who was DL40. He came forward to the Inquiry in
6 a slightly different way in response to a lot of what he
7 had been hearing. He is from a different era. He was
8 in Nazareth Lodge at a later stage and it was
9 September 1977 whenever he left, aged 12. I think from
10 recollection he spent a year in high school in Belfast
11 and then moved to Rubane because his other friends had
12 gone to Rubane, but you would have been teaching him
13 around '75/'76 or perhaps maybe slightly before that.

14 What he said to the Inquiry in his statement -- I am
15 not going to bring his statement up, but it is at 1874,
16 Members of the Panel, for the record -- in paragraph 18
17 he said you were a very strict man but very fair, but
18 then in his evidence as a result of a conversation we
19 were having -- if we can look at the transcript of his
20 evidence, which I know you only saw this morning as we
21 were discussing it. It is at 91203, please.

22 I begin this exchange, NL63, by asking him about his
23 reference to you in his statement. I indicate at that
24 point we had not become aware as to where you lived in
25 order to get in touch with you and let you have

PRIVATE

ruler with white stitching which she hit us with. If she wanted to hit you she would grab anything that was nearby. We were also hit with bamboo canes. The nuns favoured the children of families who had money and the families who appreciate how their children were looked after.

8. **NL 150** and another member of staff called **NL 114** would curl your hair and they would burn the back of your neck with the curling tongs intentionally. When checking for lice, the staff used a silver lice comb, but they did it so hard, it left me with scares and cut on my head and neck. I remember bleeding, and seeing other girls bleeding.
9. **NL 114** was a terrible person. I was in the lift once with her and **NL 150** I mentioned my grandmother and said she was dead. I was then slapped on the face and told that no one cared about me, no one wanted me, that I was worthless and I would amount to nothing. I was told the same thing all the time.
10. **NL 150** married **NL 14** the grounds man. He would come up in the evenings with sweets and get us to rub his shoulders and his feet. He had wondering hands and I tried my best to stay away from him. He would play with your hair and then rub his hands down your back and then move round to your front and I would then wriggle away. He would pretend to tickle us, and then accidentally touch your chest, and his hand was always around your bum. There was another grounds man called **NL 151** and my sister **NL 130**, told me that he interfered with her. He used to take her out on the bus and that it was when it happened.
11. My uncle came to visit us on a Sunday and he would bring three packets of polo mints. He was not allowed to take us out at the start. He would just sit with us in the Lodge. They made us sit in a foyer, close to the living room, so there was always someone from the Lodge around and we could not talk freely. There were a couple of occasions when we were allowed to go to his house. I do not remember my brothers ever coming to visit.

1 I would fall on to the floor ... body part that was
2 pulled on was either bruised or bleeding at times ...
3 went to the other -- went to the bathroom with other
4 girls and got cleaned up."

5 There is then reference to NL114, which we will come
6 back to.

7 If you scroll down, please, reference is then made
8 to life generally and to SR46 patrolling at canteen time
9 and making people eat. Scroll down, please. Reference
10 to bathing and saying that SR46 would have scrubbed her
11 whole body with a wooden scrubbing brush while in the
12 bath and how the skin would be red raw, sometimes
13 bleeding after that. She says:

14 "One time SR46 scrubbed me in the bath with a yard
15 brush with hard bristles, which left my skin red and
16 bleeding."

17 Scroll down, please. She says:

18 "I remember SR46 brought me into the kitchen on our
19 floor and starting hitting me with a metal cooking
20 spatula which she grabbed off the kitchen wall ... hit
21 me more than ten times hard with the spatula on my back
22 and the back of my legs."

23 Her sister intervened and she said that left her
24 back sore.

25 On another occasion during this time she was taken

Name: SR 52

Date: 28 November 2014

THE INQUIRY INTO HISTORICAL INSTITUTIONAL ABUSE 1922 TO 1995

Witness Statement of SR 52

I, [REDACTED] will say as follows: -

1. I have checked the records of SR 118 [REDACTED] Sister was born [REDACTED] on [REDACTED] and she died on [REDACTED] in Aberdeen. Sister entered the Congregation of the Sisters of Nazareth on 23 January 1919 and made her First Profession on 2 February 1921.
2. Sister was in Nazareth Lodge between 1922 – 1954 and her ministry was teaching and care of the boys.
3. Allegations have been made against Sister that she hit children with a strap, a stick or a hurley stick. Sister may well have slapped the children as a punishment and it could have been that she lost her temper on occasions exceeding appropriate punishment. We deny that she would have had, let alone used, a hurley stick.
4. Another allegation against [REDACTED] was that she would bring the boys into the bathroom to witness the 'bed-wetters' being punished. This may have happened but we cannot comment further on this allegation.
5. It was alleged that one child was only fed two or three times a week due to him being late at mealtimes. This is refuted.
6. Another allegation has been made that Sister rubbed a boy's face in his soiled underpants. This is refuted.
7. [REDACTED] was a very stern and strict disciplinarian and this would have affected the manner in which she cared for the children in her care. Sister died forty years ago

1 Q. And you had a similar view of the priests, that they
2 were, you know, above --

3 A. Yes, way up.

4 Q. -- with the nuns above you, as it were --

5 A. And we were --

6 Q. -- and special and important.

7 A. And we were afraid of the priests. We were frightened
8 of them.

9 Q. Just for the Panel so that context is given to the
10 evidence you are giving, SR118 appears to have been born
11 in and came to Nazareth Lodge originally
12 for a year in 1922 and then again from 1929 until 1954,
13 when she left for Aberdeen. The references for that are
14 at 12139 and 10403 and 4. So the time that you are
15 talking about between '33 and '37 or '42 she would have
16 been a person who was 33 to 42 years of age --

17 A. Uh-huh.

18 Q. -- over those years. You remember her as being in
19 charge of the dorm that you lived in during the period
20 that you can recollect --

21 A. Yes.

22 Q. -- being in the home.

23 A. Uh-huh.

24 Q. I was asking you how many children were in the dorm.
25 You thought there were around 60.

PRIVATE

were a lot of older boys and I found that intimidating. I do not remember any love or any stimulation.

5. I remember being punished a couple of times when I was about five or six years old for something trivial by being put in a freezing cold bath by **SR 118**. I was placed in the cold water and then the cold water was poured over my head about half a dozen times. I remember one occasion I was punished in this manner along with another boy called **HIA 427** who was my age. He had special needs and was not always in control of his bowels. I was punished first. **SR 118** then ordered me out of the bath and told **HIA 427** to get undressed. I realised **HIA 427** had soiled his underpants. **SR 118** took his soiled underpants and violently and cruelly rubbed them in his face. Until my dying day I will never forget what happened or what **SR 118** was capable of. **HIA 427** and I were only about seven years old and the experience has had a profound effect on me. I visited **HIA 427** when he was dying of cancer. Sadly he passed away on 25th February 2014 and I am glad to have had the opportunity to see him before he died. He was a lovely man and an old friend.
6. I also remember a night when **SR 34** made everyone in our dormitory get out of bed and kneel in the corridor for an hour. It was very cold. I do not know why we had to do this but I think it was because someone had done something wrong. **SR 34** must have realised how unfair she had been to us as she gave us all a chocolate sweet before we went to bed that night.
7. There was a lay staff member called **NL 4**. One day we were going in to the refectory for our dinner. There was a new kitchen being built and I was fascinated to see what had been built. I was looking in through the half door. I could hear **NL 4** saying to hurry up and the next minute she slapped me across the face from behind and knocked me off balance. It stung for several hours afterwards. There was no warning and it was a terrible experience. She was not suitable for that job because of her vile temper.

STATEMENT CONTINUATION PAGE

STATEMENT OF: HIA 33 STATEMENT PAGE NO: 2

(which was usually about 8 o'clock) we would be taken out of bed. and made to kneel in the corridor, half naked, and to put our arm above our heads, sometimes for an hour or more, the clan boys would move among the ranks beating anyone around the arm and body if the arms were dropped. We were also brought in front of 'Sister' and beaten with a large belt worn by the nuns for not keeping our arms up. We all suffered this fate because maybe we didn't had made a noise. From the day I arrived in the 'Nazareth Lodge' I was given a job to do. It entailed getting down on my hands and knees each morning after Mass along with the other boys. We had to polish and shine the bottom corridor. It was about 60 feet and we had to wave our hands in unison. All the time we were watched over by the clan boys and it would be inspected by [REDACTED] after we had finished. Any bit missed and we had to do it all over again watched by the clan boys who were allowed to slap us if they thought we were slacking up. Polishing the corridor had to be done before breakfast which during the week consisted of porridge and water and one piece of dripping bread. The Refectory was where we went to have breakfast. It was also the place where most of the punishment was dished out, for coughing during Mass for instance was dished as disrespectful and on many occasions I had to kneel in front of [REDACTED] and put both hands out and she used the rung of a chair to beat and slap us until our hands bled. This happened every morning during my stay and to other children as well and we all had witness to this. This was her idea of keeping control. Bathing times occurred each weekend. There was about five baths for all the children and we had to queue up ten at a time for each bath into which Tiger Fluid was added. The boys at the front of the queue had a clean hot bath while the boys like myself with a higher number 128 ended

SIGNATURE of STATEMENT MAKER
RESTRICTED

[REDACTED]

Name: Sr Brenda McCall
Date: 12th November 2014

THE INQUIRY INTO HISTORICAL INSTITUTIONAL ABUSE 1922 TO 1995

Witness Statement of Sister Brenda McCall

I, Sister Brenda, will say as follows: -

1. I have read the statement of [REDACTED] HIA 192 and confirm that our records show he was resident in Nazareth Lodge between 18th June 1945 and 8th July 1953. His brother [REDACTED] was admitted 18th June 1945 and discharged 18th March 1951 and his brother [REDACTED] was admitted 18th June 1945 and discharged on 24th September 1953.
2. [REDACTED] SR 100 was in Nazareth Lodge between 1929 – 1954. [REDACTED] SR 189 was in the school 1947 - 1959 and [REDACTED] SR 118 was in Nazareth Lodge and the school between 1922 - 1954
3. Corporal punishment was a part of school life at the time but the use of a hurley stick would not have been acceptable. This is not an item we have heard being used before.
4. The description of [REDACTED] HIA 192 that, as an older boy, watching the younger children is accepted. But the punishment he then goes on to describe seems to vary from other reports where the younger boys say they were punished by the older boys. The use of a hurley stick is not accepted and the description of an assault in paragraph 6 is also not accepted.
5. The Sisters do not accept that mouldy food or maggot laced food would have been used in the home. The Sisters ate the same food as the children and it would not be likely that this type of food would be acceptable to them.
6. It is not accepted that [REDACTED] HIA 192 was denied his dinner because he was asked to bring food to his brother.

PRIVATE

4. I collected the jotters from everyone in class one day. They were all covered in fine wallpaper. One boy who was the biggest bully in the class bit in to the corner of his. When [SR 101] was going through the jotters she accused me of biting it as the other boy had denied biting his jotter. When I denied it she made me put my teeth in to the bite marks so she could compare. I do not understand how making me put my teeth into the marks would allow her to compare. If she wanted to compare she should have made me bit beside the teeth marks. She beat me in front of the entire class. She said she was going to beat me until I told the truth. She made me kneel down in front of the class with my hands out. She hit me with the handle of a hurley stick. She kept hitting me until she got tired. My arms dropped down from the tiredness of holding them up and my fingers curled from the pain. I lost five finger nails in the next couple of weeks as a result of the beating.
5. When I was taught by [SR 118] I was a class boy and was in charge of cleaning her room. She beat me every day for various reasons like not putting her ink well in the right place or leaving dust in her classroom. I lived in constant fear of her. She destroyed my confidence. My brother told me years after we left care that my father had asked [SR 118] for clothing coupons to buy us clothes. He was never heard from again. I think that is why [SR 118] hated us.
6. Around the same time I was also put in charge of a group of boys in the St Joseph's dormitory. If one of the boys I was in charge of lost something like his sock or wet the bed I was also beaten by [SR 118]. One of the boys wet the bed once and [SR 118] blamed me for not making sure he had been to the toilet before he went to bed. She put me in a cold bath and got an older boy to pour buckets of cold water over my head. I was then taken out of the bath and [SR 118] beat me with the handle of a hurley stick. After the second hit I said "that's sore Sister". She then hit me in the groin. She hit me about six times in total and the pain was unbearable. [] told me after we left care that [SR 118] had threatened to punish a boy in his dormitory called [] in this way and he threatened to jump out the window.

PRIVATE

7. **SR 118** woke me in the mornings by hitting me on the legs with the handle of a hurley stick to get me up so I could get the other boys up.
8. I remember another occasion when the radiator in our dormitory broke and leaked water. **SR 118** punished all the boys in the dormitory by beating them. I was the first to be beaten by her. When she got tired she got another boy called [REDACTED] to take over. He was a bigger boy from the senior dormitory. He did not want to hit us but **SR 118** would have beaten him if he had not done it.
9. When the Bishop came to lay the foundation stone for the building of St Joseph's Babies Home there was a special service. The Bishop passed the crozier to the priest who then passed it to me. I was an altar boy. I was kneeling and when I stood up I knocked the light. When the boys returned to the refectory later Sister **SR 118** hit me in front of all the boys.
10. I worked in the kitchen and I remember food coming in in big bags. I remember bags of peas with maggots in them. I would have to remove as many as I could before the peas were placed in soup. If any maggots were in the soup I had to scoop them out when they floated to the top. I also remember blue moulded bread.
11. I remember a relief nun called **SR 204** forcing the fat I had cut off the meat I was eating into my mouth. I gagged and she stopped.
12. I remember playing marbles with my younger brother [REDACTED] in the playground. A man came into the playground dragging a push along lawnmower behind him. The blades were spinning as the lawnmower was being pulled and [REDACTED] hand was cut. His knuckles are still funny to this day. He was not taken to the hospital. One of the nuns took him into the bathroom to clean him up. I could hear him screaming and was trying to get in to see him but I was beaten by another nun.
13. My older brother [REDACTED] contracted tuberculosis. He was put in the isolation room. **SR 118** told me to bring him his dinner every day. By the time I got

PRIVATE

4. I collected the jotters from everyone in class one day. They were all covered in fine wallpaper. One boy who was the biggest bully in the class bit in to the corner of his. When [SR 101] was going through the jotters she accused me of biting it as the other boy had denied biting his jotter. When I denied it she made me put my teeth in to the bite marks so she could compare. I do not understand how making me put my teeth into the marks would allow her to compare. If she wanted to compare she should have made me bit beside the teeth marks. She beat me in front of the entire class. She said she was going to beat me until I told the truth. She made me kneel down in front of the class with my hands out. She hit me with the handle of a hurley stick. She kept hitting me until she got tired. My arms dropped down from the tiredness of holding them up and my fingers curled from the pain. I lost five finger nails in the next couple of weeks as a result of the beating.
5. When I was taught by [SR 118] I was a class boy and was in charge of cleaning her room. She beat me every day for various reasons like not putting her ink well in the right place or leaving dust in her classroom. I lived in constant fear of her. She destroyed my confidence. My brother told me years after we left care that my father had asked [SR 118] for clothing coupons to buy us clothes. He was never heard from again. I think that is why [SR 118] hated us.
6. Around the same time I was also put in charge of a group of boys in the St Joseph's dormitory. If one of the boys I was in charge of lost something like his sock or wet the bed I was also beaten by [SR 118]. One of the boys wet the bed once and [SR 118] blamed me for not making sure he had been to the toilet before he went to bed. She put me in a cold bath and got an older boy to pour buckets of cold water over my head. I was then taken out of the bath and [SR 118] beat me with the handle of a hurley stick. After the second hit I said "that's sore Sister". She then hit me in the groin. She hit me about six times in total and the pain was unbearable. [] told me after we left care that [SR 118] had threatened to punish a boy in his dormitory called [] in this way and he threatened to jump out the window.

1 **A. I'd see the priest at mass times and benediction times**
2 **and that was it.**

3 Q. Going back -- and I know I am jumping through this
4 statement -- but going back to paragraph 11, you talk
5 about the dormitories there, and you said at night --
6 sorry.

7 "The rooms had 30 or 40 boys in each room. I think
8 there might have been five or six dormitories and there
9 was nothing wrong with the bedding or heat."

10 So you were warm enough and the beds were
11 comfortable enough, HIA89?

12 **A. Yes.**

13 Q. Now I am going to move on to talk about specific things
14 you complain about during your time in the home. If we
15 could go, first of all, to paragraph 3, you say there
16 that things changed once you reached 6 or 7 years of age
17 and the bad things started. Can I just check with you,
18 HIA89, that was when you were moved from the nursery --

19 **A. Yes.**

20 Q. -- where you had been from the age of 2 --

21 **A. Yes.**

22 Q. -- into the junior section --

23 **A. Yes.**

24 Q. -- of the home. Is that right?

25 **A. Yes.**

PRIVATE

5. We would get up about 6 or 6.30am and go for breakfast. For breakfast we got bread and dripping and maybe a cup of milk, but it wasn't very much. I was always hungry and the food was always of a poor standard. We then went to school on the same site. The teachers were the same nuns.
6. [REDACTED] SR 118 [REDACTED] would shout or beat us even though we weren't doing anything wrong. If work wasn't done right God help you. You would get battered on the floor. [REDACTED] SR 118 [REDACTED] would usually use a hurley stick, an ordinary stick or strap to beat us. [REDACTED] SR 118 [REDACTED] was a wicked old woman.
7. School finished between 3 and 4pm. After school, the nuns would either make us to do work or allow us to go out to the playing field at the back of the home. Other than a football there were no toys to play with. We made up our own games.
8. One of my main jobs was cleaning a large Terrazzo corridor. I had to sweep, scrub and polish it. There were two boys at one end and two at the other – it would take about 2 or 3 hours to clean and the nuns would regularly come out and check on us. I was 8 years old and the work continued until I left when I was 12.
9. The weekends were the same except we had no school. We had to do more jobs around the home. When we weren't cleaning we passed the time in the dining room.
10. After dinner we usually went to the playing fields and then to the chapel for benediction before bed.
11. The rooms had nearly 30 or 40 boys in each room. I think there might have been 5 or 6 dormitories. There was nothing wrong with the bedding or the heat.
12. At night if you were caught talking the nun who was supervising would come and give you a whack. [REDACTED] SR 118 [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] SR 100 [REDACTED] were in charge of my

PRIVATE

7. In the dormitory there were beds down both sides and also down the middle. All of the beds had a big red rubber mackintosh underneath the sheet in case you wet the bed. They were warm in the summer and cold in the winter.
8. The boys who wet the bed were treated very badly by **SR 118**. All the boys in the dormitory were brought to the bathroom to watch the bed wetter's get punished. They were placed in a cold bath, regardless of whether it was winter or summer. There would be an older boy who poured buckets of cold water over the boy's head. It was so cold the boy in the bath would be unable to breathe. **SR 118** would then get the boy out of the bath and put him on the red tiled floor. She would hit him on the behind and it would sting because he was cold. If he turned over she would put her foot in his groin and hit him again. I never wet the bed so I was never punished in this way but I was made to watch the same four or five boys being punished in this way nearly every morning.
9. At school if you made any mistakes you had to go up in front of the class and the teacher would make you hold out your hand and she would hit you so hard that your knuckles would swell up. I was regularly hit on the knuckles.
10. In the dining room if you didn't finish your food a nun would bang her finger which had a thimble on it on the table and tell us to eat up. I think it was Sister **SR 100**. The food was smelly and bad. The potatoes were especially bad as they were steamed not boiled. We were so hungry we used to go round the back of the kitchen most days and eat the apple and orange skins from the dustbin. Breakfast was porridge with salt and sour milk. At eleven we got half a cup of hot milk and half a slice of bread and dripping. We would be hungry but we got over it and to this day I still don't have a big appetite.
11. At Christmas time we got a special outing to the cinema to see Mickey Mouse. I enjoyed seeing the big red curtains more than Mickey Mouse. The lights shining down on them fascinated me. On Christmas Eve we would be woken at 11pm for midnight mass. Then we would go down into the refectory and

1 Q. -- and then buckets of cold water were poured over them.

2 A. Uh-huh.

3 Q. You made the point to me earlier that that happened, the
4 cold water happened, winter and summer.

5 A. Uh-huh. Exactly.

6 Q. The cold water was poured over by an older boy, and then
7 when the person was taken out of the bath and put on to
8 the red tiled floor, then SR118 would have hit the boy.

9 A. Uh-huh.

10 Q. What did she use to hit the boy who had been brought out
11 of the bath?

12 A. She took her belt off from her waist. She had a belt.

13 Q. Then you explained to me that in addition to using the
14 belt she used her foot on occasion. When did she use
15 her foot?

16 A. When the boy was hit on the behind, his body was very,
17 very cold and the strapping was stinging him. So he
18 turned over that way, and SR118 put the heel of her shoe
19 in his private area and twisted it. That happened all
20 the time.

21 Q. One of the points you make: you were glad you were not
22 someone who ever wet the bed.

23 A. Uh-huh.

24 Q. I was asking you then -- because the Inquiry may have
25 looked at yesterday a document from the Ministry of Home

1 Affairs -- I was explaining to you that in 1927 the
2 Ministry attended at the home, and, Members of the
3 Panel, it is at SNB-13659 and 13660, and as a result of
4 that visit it was explained that punishing children for
5 bedwetting was counter-productive and shouldn't happen,
6 and you are there between '33 and '41/'42. So that's
7 after that has been discussed in the home.

8 **A. Uh-huh.**

9 Q. How regularly was this punishment for bedwetting taking
10 place? Did it happen just once or twice?

11 **A. Every day. Every day. Every day maybe three or four**
12 **boys wet the bed and so it happened every day.**

13 Q. And did that go on through as far as you can remember
14 your time --

15 **A. Exactly.**

16 Q. -- in Nazareth Lodge?

17 **A. As far as I can remember it went on all the time.**

18 Q. Because in your statement in paragraph 8 you talk about
19 "boys", plural, and that's why I wanted to see could you
20 assist the Inquiry with whether this was a regular
21 punishment that was taking place.

22 **A. Oh, yes, yes.**

23 Q. And --

24 **A. SR118 was only happy when she was beating you.**

25 Q. The -- as I said to you earlier, the Sisters now accept,

PRIVATE

15. SR 186 was a nun who stands out for different reasons. She was like a motherly figure to the boys. I do not know if she was aware what was going on in Nazareth Lodge in the dormitories or the bathroom. SR 186 gave me the only comfort in that place. Whenever she was there I felt protected, and she showed us affection. SR 186 was often unwell, and if she had to go away because of her ill health I would pray that she would get better so that she could come back and look after me again. When SR 186 was away, SR 118 was in charge of me, and the abuse would have happened again. It was like this until I left Nazareth Lodge. SR 186 has since passed away, and I have visited her grave.
16. We were taken out in minibuses to the beach at Tyrella in Newcastle for a day every summer. The nuns and the older boys organised these trips and looked after us when we were out. I looked forward to this day trip, which was a welcome break away from Nazareth Lodge. All of the boys would be lined up and given ice-cream and sweets.
17. We wore sandals most of the time. I remember being at the nun's cemetery and being made to wear shoes that were so tight that I could barely fit my feet into them. I could not walk in the shoes and I was crippled. The bigger boys escorted the younger boys and hit us with sticks to move us on. They seemed to be in a privileged position and were much older and bigger than me.
18. I do not remember much about the clothes that we were given to wear, other than the underwear. The underwear that I was made to wear was so tight that I struggled to take it off if I needed to go to the bathroom. I often wet myself as a result. I think that I was given the tight underwear by the older boys on purpose, to draw attention to me. Other than the underwear, I have no complaints about the clothes we were given, and I remember being warm enough.

1 You talk about another nun in the home, whom we have
2 given here the designation "SR100". Just to make it
3 clear who we are talking about, this was SR100.

4 **A. Yes.**

5 Q. Again the names are not to be used outside.

6 **A. SR100.**

7 Q. You say she never inflicted punishment on you herself,
8 but she condoned what was going on around her. You say:

9 "She witnessed what SR118 was doing to us and was
10 acting in a supporting role to her. There were other
11 nuns as well, but I didn't really have much contact with
12 them, as they were not directly looking after us."

13 You draw a distinction then in the next paragraph,
14 HIA99, between these two nuns and another nun, "SR186",
15 who was SR186.

16 **A. Yes.**

17 Q. You say she was a nun who stands out for different
18 reasons. She was like a motherly figure to the boys.
19 You don't know if she was aware of what was going on in
20 Nazareth Lodge in the dormitories or in the bathroom,
21 but she gave you the only comfort in that place.
22 Whenever she was there, you felt protected and she
23 showed you affection. She was often unwell and had to
24 go away because of her ill health, and you used to pray
25 she would get better so she could come back and look

1 responsibility of the local authority, as it would have
2 been prior to the 1950 Act coming into force. So that
3 would accord with your recollection there were upwards
4 of 200 children in Nazareth Lodge during your time.

5 **A. That's right.**

6 Q. Your dorm that you were in, which you -- your feeling
7 was there was about 40 children in your dorm that you
8 remember.

9 **A. Well, I would estimate roughly about 40.**

10 Q. SR118 was the nun who was in charge of your dorm.

11 **A. That's true.**

12 Q. She had a cell, as it were, or a cubicle in the corner
13 of the dorm room with a window and a curtain --

14 **A. That's true.**

15 Q. -- where she slept?

16 **A. That's true.**

17 Q. As I said to the Inquiry yesterday, she was born in
18 . So she would have been between 46 and 52 years of
19 age during the time that you were in Nazareth Lodge.

20 You describe, HIA87, in paragraph 15, if we can go
21 to 257, please, a form of group punishment that was
22 given to you if anyone in the dorm of the 40 boys wet
23 the bed. You explain how the boy who wet the bed was
24 put in a cold bath and then the other boys were made
25 kneel with their hands above their heads on the floor.

1 **A. That's true.**

2 Q. You would have been hit with a belt that she wore around
3 her waist.

4 **A. That's true.**

5 Q. You say if her belt wasn't available, she would use
6 a brush shaft to hit you instead.

7 **A. Well, that's another thing that was available to her at**
8 **times.**

9 Q. So in the main when she did the hitting, it was the belt
10 she was using. Is that right?

11 **A. That's right.**

12 Q. And then on more limited occasions it was this brush
13 shaft?

14 **A. That's true.**

15 Q. You described her to me earlier as an angel and a devil.
16 At times she could be nice and then at times she was
17 anything but nice.

18 **A. Well, it was I think -- I don't know what was wrong with**
19 **her, but she wasn't just a person you could trust.**

20 Q. You say in paragraph 16 to the Inquiry that her
21 punishments that she meted out to you knew no bounds.
22 What do you mean by that?

23 **A. Well, for a start when she did -- putting it politely,**
24 **when she was in a bad mood, you know, I think she got**
25 **rid of her ill feelings into -- into the boys and into**

1 the person that she was administrating the punishment to
2 and the next day she was okay. So I don't know why --
3 what it was with her, but I think -- I think personally
4 it was -- sometimes it was too much for her, now looking
5 back on it.

6 Q. I was asking you earlier do you remember how many nuns
7 there were looking after this group of 180 children, if
8 my number is right, and you thought there was five,
9 maybe six nuns.

10 A. Well, I can remember SR118, SR184 and the Sister in the
11 front parlour and the Sister in the kitchen and that was
12 about it. The rest of the sisters were never really
13 seen, you know. We only seen them when they went to the
14 chapel during services. We never -- if we were in the
15 corridor, maybe meeting Mother Superior and she'd speak
16 to you and ask you if you were okay and how things was,
17 and that's the only time you seen her. You never seen
18 her on any official duties round about the dormitories
19 or anything. Well, she maybe done it when we weren't
20 there. So ...

21 Q. Did you feel able to tell the Mother Superior what
22 things were really like?

23 A. I felt intimidated, because you weren't supposed to
24 speak to the Mother Superior unless she spoke to you.

25 Q. When she asked you how things were, did you feel able to

Name: [REDACTED]

Date: 28 November 2014

THE INQUIRY INTO HISTORICAL INSTITUTIONAL ABUSE 1922 TO 1995

Witness Statement of SR 52 [REDACTED]

I, SR 52 [REDACTED] will say as follows: -

1. I have checked the records of [REDACTED] Sister was born [REDACTED] on [REDACTED] and she died on [REDACTED] in Aberdeen. Sister entered the Congregation of the Sisters of Nazareth on 23 January 1919 and made her First Profession on 2 February 1921.
2. Sister was in Nazareth Lodge between 1922 – 1954 and her ministry was teaching and care of the boys.
3. Allegations have been made against Sister that she hit children with a strap, a stick or a hurley stick. Sister may well have slapped the children as a punishment and it could have been that she lost her temper on occasions exceeding appropriate punishment. We deny that she would have had, let alone used, a hurley stick.
4. Another allegation against [REDACTED] was that she would bring the boys into the bathroom to witness the 'bed-wetters' being punished. This may have happened but we cannot comment further on this allegation.
5. It was alleged that one child was only fed two or three times a week due to him being late at mealtimes. This is refuted.
6. Another allegation has been made that Sister rubbed a boy's face in his soiled underpants. This is refuted.
7. [REDACTED] was a very stern and strict disciplinarian and this would have affected the manner in which she cared for the children in her care. Sister died forty years ago

we cannot seek her own recollection of the children involved nor ask her to respond to the allegations that have been made against her.

Statement of Truth

I believe that the facts stated in this witness statement are true.

Signed

A black rectangular box redacting the signature.

Dated 28 November 2014

Name: [REDACTED]

Date: 28 November 2014

THE INQUIRY INTO HISTORICAL INSTITUTIONAL ABUSE 1922 TO 1995

Witness Statement of SR 52 [REDACTED]

I, [REDACTED] will say as follows: -

1. I have checked the records of Sister SR 34 [REDACTED] Sister was born [REDACTED] on 11 November 1913 and she died on 19 March 1997 in Fahan Co Donegal. Sister entered the Congregation of the Sisters of Nazareth on 8 December 1929 and made her First Profession on 21 November 1932.
2. Sister was in Nazareth Lodge between 1952 – 1973 and her ministry was teaching and she was also responsible for a group of boys. Sister was awarded her teachers certificate in 1952. In 1960 [REDACTED] became Principal of the school until its amalgamation in 1974.
3. Allegations have been made against Sister that she would grab the children by their side-locks and swing them around, punch the children with her closed fists and lift them up by their side-locks and also kicked the children. While Sister may have disciplined the children it is refuted that it was as reported. We accept she may have pulled at side locks but do not accept she lifted or swung the children as described. We do not accept she punched or kicked children.
4. An allegation has been made that [REDACTED] made the children kneel in the corridor on a cold night, then relented and gave them a chocolate sweet before allowing them back to bed. While Sister may have made the children kneel, it would have been to say their prayers before going to bed, but this would have only been a few minutes, and not for punishment.

PRIVATE

3. **SR 34** was also the principal of the primary school in Nazareth Lodge. She was good to me most of the time and took me under her wing in a way. She put me in charge of the tuck shop which was like a red flag to a bull as I started to steal the sweets. One day **SR 34** called me into a room and asked if I had stolen anything. I denied any theft and she said she would give me one more chance to tell the truth but I denied it and then she made me empty out the sweets from my pockets. She gave me a really bad beating that day because I had let her down. I ended up crawling under the table and she was grabbing me out from underneath the table. She lost it completely and she was kicking me with her feet and boots and hitting me with her hands. I was about seven or eight at the time and I felt really bad about this incident.
4. On another occasion I was supposed to be an altar boy when someone was visiting the home but I stayed outside and played football. When I eventually came in **NL 5** took me into a small room and gave me a serious beating which I remember to this day. She had slapped me before this incident but never with the same severity. She beat me with her hands and kicked me with her feet. I was about eight or nine years old at the time. I am still not great with authority even now.
5. On another occasion after school I was playing in the old school dining room. The school was part of the home. Although it was in a different building it was part of the same complex. The school was separate from the home but the dining facilities were in the home and the nuns bedrooms were in the same building, all on ground floor level. We were taking off the rubber ends that were used to keep chairs from scraping the floor and we started playing football with them, making noise and throwing them around. I cannot remember which one caught us but either **SR 34** or **NL 5** came in and grabbed me and took me into her bedroom and gave me another beating which lasted between five and ten minutes and which I considered to be a bit excessive. I no longer recall the nature of my injuries nor do I recall receiving any medical treatment following this incident.

1 "This is the only bad thing I remember SR34 doing,
2 because overall I adored her, but I think on this
3 occasion she was in a blind rage because of what I had
4 done."

5 What -- what was it about her that you adored?

6 **A. She just was very nice to me. That incident is the only**
7 **incident that ever happened with her and the rest was**
8 **just very caring.**

9 Q. You put that down to the breach of trust, that that just
10 sent her over the edge?

11 **A. Yes, yes.**

12 Q. You said to me earlier she seemed to take you under --

13 **A. Her wing.**

14 Q. -- her wing.

15 **A. Yes, she did, yes.**

16 Q. But your experience of her with this particular singular
17 incident was not the same as your experience with NL5.

18 **A. No, no.**

19 Q. NL5 is "NL5", and it seems, subject to receipt of her
20 signed statement, that she worked in the home between
21 1956, when she was in her 30s, and -- perhaps in her
22 20s -- 20s through to 1999. So she worked for a very
23 long time in the home. The reference for that, Members
24 of the Panel, can be found at 60823. It seems she would
25 have been in her 40s approximately during the time that

PRIVATE

were a lot of older boys and I found that intimidating. I do not remember any love or any stimulation.

5. I remember being punished a couple of times when I was about five or six years old for something trivial by being put in a freezing cold bath by **SR 118**. I was placed in the cold water and then the cold water was poured over my head about half a dozen times. I remember one occasion I was punished in this manner along with another boy called **HIA 427** who was my age. He had special needs and was not always in control of his bowels. I was punished first. **SR 118** then ordered me out of the bath and told **HIA 427** to get undressed. I realised **HIA 427** had soiled his underpants. **SR 118** took his soiled underpants and violently and cruelly rubbed them in his face. Until my dying day I will never forget what happened or what **SR 118** was capable of. **HIA 427** and I were only about seven years old and the experience has had a profound effect on me. I visited **HIA 427** when he was dying of cancer. Sadly he passed away on 25th February 2014 and I am glad to have had the opportunity to see him before he died. He was a lovely man and an old friend.
6. I also remember a night when **SR 34** made everyone in our dormitory get out of bed and kneel in the corridor for an hour. It was very cold. I do not know why we had to do this but I think it was because someone had done something wrong. **SR 34** must have realised how unfair she had been to us as she gave us all a chocolate sweet before we went to bed that night.
7. There was a lay staff member called **NL 4**. One day we were going in to the refectory for our dinner. There was a new kitchen being built and I was fascinated to see what had been built. I was looking in through the half door. I could hear **NL 4** saying to hurry up and the next minute she slapped me across the face from behind and knocked me off balance. It stung for several hours afterwards. There was no warning and it was a terrible experience. She was not suitable for that job because of her vile temper.

1 HIA427 hadn't been well. Can I mention HIA21, can I?

2 Q. Yes.

3 A. HIA21 and I -- HIA21 and I went down to visit him.

4 HIA427 -- HIA427 told me -- we talked. We caught up
5 about the news and how happy he was, and we asked him
6 was he happy in the home, and HIA427 says he hadn't got
7 happy memories at all in the home. The next minute we
8 knew -- we went down quite a few times before he passed
9 away. To me HIA427 -- I remember him in Kircubbin. He
10 had a miserable old existence, you know.

11 Q. You talk about SR34 then, who is "SR34", HIA183, in
12 paragraph 6. Just to be fair to her, you would put her
13 in a different bracket. The words you used to me
14 earlier: she was cold as far as you were concerned, but
15 she wasn't like SR118.

16 A. No. I think SR34, I mean, she had a big responsibility,
17 you know, looking after the children. I think she had
18 a lot on her mind, you know. You didn't get the
19 individual attention, you know. Personally I think she
20 was under a lot of pressure at that particular time.

21 Q. But you draw a contrast between her and SR118.

22 A. Oh, a big contrast.

23 Q. What was different between the two of them?

24 A. Well, I think SR34 was a wee bit more compassionate at
25 times, you know. She would have been compassionate at

1 **times, you know.**

2 Q. You describe in paragraph 6 then a particular incident
3 where everyone is made get out of bed in the dormitory
4 --

5 **A. That's correct.**

6 Q. -- and kneel in the corridor --

7 **A. That's right.**

8 Q. -- for what felt like an hour. I am not sure whether it
9 was an hour or not, but --

10 **A. I don't know.**

11 Q. -- it felt like an hour to you.

12 **A. Yes.**

13 Q. You said to me earlier you think you were probably 9 or
14 10 at the time of this.

15 **A. That's correct.**

16 Q. Can you remember what had happened that everybody got
17 punished in this way?

18 **A. No. As I said to you, I don't remember actually really**
19 **what it was about. Nobody knew what it was about, but**
20 **we must have been half an hour, ten or fifteen minutes**
21 **standing -- there was a big passage and a sort of**
22 **terrazzo floor and we were kneeling -- we were asked to**
23 **get out of bed and kneel down. Somebody must have done**
24 **something and it annoyed SR34. We were kneeling there**
25 **for about half an hour I'd say was probably the least.**

1 Q. Was this -- if I can ask you, HIA183, was this type of
2 group punishment a normal thing or was this an unusual
3 thing?

4 A. This was an unusual thing actually. That was the only
5 thing I can recollect. It wasn't an occurrence, you
6 know.

7 Q. Afterwards you make the point that you feel she must
8 have regretted -- whatever the reason for it, the doing
9 of it she must have regretted, because she gave
10 everybody a sweet afterwards.

11 A. Well, she had a box of sweets and she told us to help
12 ourselves. So we all took a big box -- you know,
13 handful of. I think she realised she probably was in
14 the wrong. That was my only conclusion.

15 Q. She, like whoever was in your dorm before SR34 came
16 along, was in a cubicle or had a cubicle in the corner
17 --

18 A. That's correct.

19 Q. -- with a window and a curtain.

20 A. That's correct.

21 Q. Would she have checked on you from time to time? Can
22 you remember her checking?

23 A. No.

24 Q. You don't?

25 A. No.

PRIVATE

David. Sister [SR 47] was in charge of my group. She was ok. Sister [SR 71] was a lovely nun; I think she was in charge of the Marion group.

5. Sister [SR 34] was in charge of St. Joseph's group and she was a bad one. She was the worst nun. If you did something wrong, she would take you by your sideburns, lift you up off the floor, drop you and then kick you. She was a big, hefty woman. She weighed about sixteen stone and we were only six or seven years old.
6. [NL 5] was a civilian staff member who worked alongside Sister [SR 34] in St. Joseph's group. At times she was alright, but other times she was a terror. She thought nothing of thumping you.
7. We slept in dormitories with about twenty to twenty-five boys in each dorm. An older boy called a charge hand was in charge of each dorm. The charge hand in my dormitory was called [REDACTED] but I cannot recall his first name. When you were younger you were bullied until you learned to stand up for yourself. You had to fight or you got bullied. Even when we were seven years old, we were fighting amongst ourselves.
8. On wet Saturdays we couldn't get out to play so the charge hands would pick younger boys to fight each other for their amusement. They would put you with someone who was a bit bigger. We could fight up to six or seven fights in one day until you were beaten or blood was drawn.
9. Day to day life in Nazareth Lodge wasn't too bad. We got up at about 7am and did our chores before we went down to breakfast. These chores involved cleaning our dormitory and making our beds. The food in the Lodge was bog standard, it was nothing special but if you didn't eat it you starved. There was plenty of food. It wasn't the best but we didn't go hungry. After breakfast we had more chores to do like cleaning the kitchen and the dining room.
10. I went to school onsite in Nazareth Lodge. The education was bog standard and when I left I couldn't read or write. I can't remember the names of any of the teachers in the school. We would often be punished in school. In the

PRIVATE

7. I had a sister called [REDACTED] in Nazareth House but the nuns never told me. My friend [HIA 19] had a sister there too but nobody told him either. One day [HIA 19] granny told him to walk up to Nazareth House and he would see a girl waving so he did. He asked his granny who the girl was and she told him it was his sister [NHB 12]. The nuns never told either of us we had a sister, they kept it all quiet.
8. I went to school onsite in Nazareth Lodge but they didn't teach you much. There was spelling and sums but I was hopeless at it. I couldn't read or write, I still can't to this day. I can only write my name. I didn't like school in Nazareth Lodge.
9. The food at Nazareth Lodge wasn't up to much. It was like semolina or frogs spawn. I did not like the food, it was rotten but you had to eat it or else you got hit across the face by the civilian staff [NL 5] or [NL 4]. On the day of your First Holy Communion you got a fried egg but that was the only time. You were lucky to get a fried egg.
10. The clothes at the Lodge were just shorts and a t-shirt. There was no such thing as jeans, just the wee shorts.
11. The nuns I remember are [SR 47] and [SR 34]. [SR 34] was really bad. She hit me on many occasions with a stick, a strap or a hand. There used to be an open day when people would come up to see us. [SR 34] would say if she saw anybody begging from them, she would give us a good thrashing. On one occasion, one of the visiting nuns gave me money, threepence or sixpence. The next day [SR 34] got me by the cheeks with her big nails and lifted me clean off the floor by the cheeks. She did this to me whenever I did anything wrong or misbehaved. It would leave marks on my face.
12. [NL 4] was the worst member of staff. If you wet the bed she would put you in these big washing machines, put the lid down and pretend to turn it on. She did this to me a few times and I would be screaming 'I'll not do it

Statement of Witness

Statement of:

Forename

Surname

Age of
Witness

N

N

N

Years

If over 18
tick here

☒

I declare that this statement consisting of 06 page (s), each signed by me is true to the best of my knowledge and belief and I make it knowing that, if it is tendered in evidence at a preliminary enquiry or at the trial of any person, I shall be liable to prosecution if I have wilfully stated in it anything which I know to be false or do not believe to be true.

Signature of Witness:

Service
/ Staff# if
Police/Staff

A A N N N N N N

Date: 30/05/12

Signature Witnessed
By: (Appropriate Adult)

Service
/ Staff# if
Police/Staff

A A N 20243

Date: 30/05/12

Signature of Member:
(by whom statement was
recorded or received)

I was born in [redacted] and was placed into St Joseph's Baby Home, Belfast. I am not sure what age I was but I moved from the Baby Home into Nazareth hodge, Ravenhill Road, Belfast. I left Nazareth hodge in 1970 when I was 15 years old. From Nazareth hodge I moved to De ha Salle Boys Home in Kircubbin. My time at De ha Salle was a good time, I enjoyed it there. This was different to my time at Nazareth hodge. My earliest memory here was just of not liking it due to a Nun called Sister (Sr) Clare. If I did anything wrong or misbehaved she used to grip the cheeks of my face with both hands, with the heels of her palms near my jaws and her fingertips near to my eyes. Gripping tightly she would then lift

Signature of Witness:

Signature Witnessed By: (Appropriate Adult)

PRIVATE

17. We went to school on site and there was one nun called **SR 34** she used to grab us by the side locks and pull us up then she would swing us round and then we got beaten. I don't remember much about the education we used to draw things but we never had homework.
18. Our uniforms were corduroy brown and we had short trousers. The nuns used to whip us around the legs with a cane both in school and at home. It would usually be one of the nuns who taught us who would be doing the whipping and it was a regular occurrence when we misbehaved.
19. One day I left the home to go out to the shop and I got lost. I remember stopping a bus on the Ormeau Road, I didn't know where I was and I when I got back to the home the head nun came out and she pulled off her belt, a black belt and beat the crap out of me. This only happened once but the beatings and knuckle sticks went on for a few years.
20. The older boys in the home used to cane us as well. There was a resident called **NL 28** **[REDACTED]** He was cared for by a staff member called **NL 5** **[REDACTED]** He would walk over to us and lift our hand to his hand and then hit it a slap. He would immediately start crying and **NL 5** would beat the shit out of us for hitting him. **NL 5** would have beaten us regularly.
21. In the summer we would be taken to Ballyhornan. There were wires coming out of the walls and we were always getting electric shocks. The place was coming down with ear wigs and was very unsafe.
22. In the home I did not get to see my brothers or sisters I didn't even know they were there. My sister **[REDACTED]** would come up when she was released from care and bring me to my father's house. As a result of our time in care my family are not close and it has affected our relationship.

PRIVATE

us and he saw her and he immediately felt guilty and threw me to the other side of the bed and I started crawling up into my bed. I was about seven or eight then. I remember he talked about my grandmother in an attempt to calm me as he was sexually interfering with me. I reported this incident to **SR 47** but she brushed it off and did not believe me.

11. **DL 280** and **DL 209** were brothers. I am not even sure which one of them did that to me but I think it was **DL 280**. I heard that one of them committed suicide about a year ago. I think he was sixty two and it was starting to come out. They were two bad boys.
12. **NL 5** was one of the civilian staff, she wasn't a nun. She is eighty four now but she was wicked herself was not nice to children. She used to hit us with the edge of wooden rulers and stuff like that on the knuckles and back of the hands for no reason. I think she lived in the building and was in St Joseph's group.
13. I remember an incident on a Saturday again when the boys had a pillow fight. **NL 5** came in and told certain boys including me to go to the dining room. I told her I had not been involved in the fight but she beat me badly with six here and six there with a wooden ruler just because I was awake when this was taking place. I was eight or nine at this time.
14. I met **NL 5** at a funeral about one and a half years ago. She told me she was eighty four then. She did not want to talk to me about the home. She just wanted to be left to pray alone.
15. The police told me they had spoken to her but I don't think they are pressing charges as she is in her eighties now.
16. There was a nun in the home, **SR 34** who was very wicked. She is dead now but I used to be so scared of her. She used to lift us up by the cheeks and ears from the floor and throw us up against the wall or on the floor in the classroom. She would get angry for no reason at all. She was a really wicked woman. She was in charge of St Joseph's. I remember my grandmother

PRIVATE

bought me a hard back mass book that I was reading and all of a sudden I was pulled from the bench and she trailed me down the passage in the chapel and started kicking me in the face. She thought I was reading a comic book. She battered my face black and blue. She took the book from me and I was crying.

17. I told my grandmother when she came up on the Saturday. My grandmother told the social worker but I cannot recall their name. I remember **SR 34** coming over to me and saying you reported this to your grandmother, she said you think you had it worse, well you see the next time it will be worse again. I was living in fear again. It was just basically fear all the time growing up. After that she never beat me as bad as she did in the chapel but she did smack me on the ears an awful lot.
18. My sister was in Nazareth House and I wasn't allowed to see her. When I was about seven or eight my grandmother made arrangements for **NHB 12** to come out at a certain time at lunch to wave at me and I was in the other end of the field at our school. I used to say to the boys "that's my sister waving at me". Most lunch times we were out waiting but that was as much as we were allowed to see each other which was sad but at least I was happy that I had a sister.
19. On school mornings I would get up and go down to the dining room. There were four groups partitioned off and we had breakfast. I used to get a boiled egg and toast. We went off to school but I don't remember a lot about school. I can't remember the lunches or the dinners very well. I just remember being hungry most of the time.
20. On a Sunday we all wore a brown corduroy suit to mass. They made us work hard on weekends. They cut cloths from blankets and put them on our feet and on Saturdays we cleaned the big passageway from one end of the hallway. We used to polish that with our feet for at least a couple of hours. I was seven or eight at the time.
21. There was a massive copper machine in the laundry in Nazareth Lodge and if you wet the bed they would scare you by saying that if you wet the bed again you would be thrown in with the sheets. Two lay members of staff, **NL 5**

PRIVATE

They both would have hit us with a stick for not doing as we were told. Sister **SR 34** was a very angry person.

4. I shared a dormitory with about twenty other boys. When we were going to bed at night **NL 5** forced us to line up and show her our underpants to see if they were clean or not and if they weren't clean we were beaten with a stick. We went to bed about 6pm every evening and we could hear the children from the other groups still out playing in the yard. We weren't allowed to go out because **NL 5** would not allow us. Our group were called the "dainties" as **NL 5** always had us washed and cleaned and didn't want us to get dirty. We were forced to lie in bed with the blanket and sheet over our heads. I could never understand why. We were sweating under those blankets and it must affect your breathing over the years. I have always had bad coughs and I suffer from asthma and I wonder whether that is why. If we didn't keep the blanket and sheet over our heads or we made any sound we were hit on the head with a stick by **SR 34** or **NL 5** who were walking around supervising us all. It never seemed right to me. It was cruel and it was scary. I was only about five or six.
5. **SR 34** also taught us at school, which was in the Lodge. When she asked a question in class we would put our hand up to answer it. The first time you put your hand up and answered a question correctly it was OK but if you put your hand up again to answer another question, regardless of whether you got it right or wrong, she would shout you down and tell you to put your hand down and stop showing off. You would be sent to the corner and told to face the wall until the end of the class. Also, if I got sums wrong **SR 34** would smack me on the face and then put me in the corner for the rest of the class. **SR 34** would also have pulled me up by the hair and pulled my cheeks. This happened on more than one occasion. It was so cruel and I felt it was a terrible upbringing.
6. There was another teacher, **NL 63**, who was very fond of the strap. He would hit me with the strap about four times per week. He taught History and English. He would pull you up by the hair if you got anything wrong. I did not

PRIVATE

kept running away. I did not know he was leaving and I did not see him for three years after he was moved.

9. A number of months after I was placed in Nazareth Lodge I remember having athletes foot and being given cream to treat it. My feet were so painful it made me cry and I remember being beaten by **SR 34** with a wooden bat because I was crying. She was very harsh and I remember her beating other children for messing around or talking after lights out.
10. I remember a couple of times when we were having baths there was a member of staff whose name I cannot remember who would pull our towels off and laugh at the size of our penises. She also used to flick us with a towel. She also used to encourage older boys to do it too. It was very painful, especially if the towels were damp.
11. I remember being force fed turnip by the same member of staff when I was about nine. I did not want the turnip but this person pushed it into my mouth and hit me around the face and made me swallow it. This made me vomit and she then made me eat the vomit.
12. I remember having to go to court in connection with my father. I assume it was in relation to the arson. I understand he went to prison and served about six months. I remember he then started to come to visit us and take us out on Sundays. We had not seen him in maybe a year. He took us up to Nazareth House to see my sisters. This was a standing arrangement which was put in place when I was in the Sacred Heart group.
13. After a while I decided that I wanted out of the Sacred Heart group as it was too tough. I worried about how **NL 3** would cope if he was subjected to the bullying from other boys, nuns and members of staff that I had both experienced and witnessed. I wanted to try and protect him. When **NL 3** moved up from the nursery the both of us were moved to the Marion group.
14. There was a woman in the Marion group called **NL 4** My first memory of her was that she was nice. She gave us sweets and we thought she was

PRIVATE

5. My memory of Nazareth Lodge is that the nuns kicked and beat us, cut and shaved our hair and used Jeyes fluid to clean us. A frequent punishment was to make you clean the floors of the home with a hand scrubber.
6. I recall going to school at that time but it was a waste of time. We could not learn as we lived in constant fear and felt nervous all the time which was not conducive to learning. I was always afraid of being given a hiding or being kicked by the nuns or teachers. I would spend my time looking at the walls in school as I was always fearful and anxious. There were also a lot of rough children at the school. I decided I was not going to let them beat me so I always got on with my life.
7. I remember feeling hungry during my time at Nazareth Lodge and not getting much food.
8. You were not allowed to leave the grounds of the Lodge. If you sneaked out the nuns would give you a serious beating.
9. There were four nuns who were particularly cruel to me, **SR 100** Sister **SR 151** **SR 34** and **SR 118**. These nuns carried out most of the assaults on me. **SR 34** was in the cell in my dormitory, she would have insisted my trousers were taken down when I was being strapped for wetting the bed. After she threw the wet and dirty sheets over me I was subjected to cold baths.
10. Another very cruel nun was **SR 100**. She was very rough and loved hitting me. She strapped me on the bench and hit me with her fist and on the head with her knuckles. She would hit me on the hands first and then put my hands on the bench and hit the back of my hand with her knuckles. If she missed my hands she would hit me across the legs. I was hit with a black strap, sticks or sometimes with a more flexible stick like a cane. You would be too afraid to even look at her.

PRIVATE

HIA REF: 247

Witness Name: HIA 247

THE INQUIRY INTO HISTORICAL INSTITUTIONAL ABUSE 1922 TO 1995

WITNESS STATEMENT OF HIA 247

I, HIA 247 will say as follows:-

Personal details

1. I was born on [REDACTED] I lived in Belfast initially and moved to Birmingham when I was about nine or ten years old.
2. I lived with my mother and five siblings in Birmingham until my father said that some of us would have to go back to Belfast. My brother NL 64 my sister [REDACTED] and I volunteered to come back and we went to live with my grandfather in the [REDACTED] My uncle [REDACTED] and his wife and children lived with my grandfather at the time and he did not feel there was enough room for us all. I am not really sure who decided to put us in care but a man who I think was called Mr Gracey from Social Services or NSPCC came and told my brother NL 64 and I that we had to go and live in Nazareth Lodge. I was about nine or ten at the time and NL 64 is three years younger than me. My sister [REDACTED] went to live with my paternal aunt.

Nazareth Lodge (1956/1957 – 15 August 1959)

3. The first week I was there was very upsetting. I felt that I was being punished for something I had done that was wrong. NL 64 and I tried to run away but we were caught by SR 34 who was the head sister and she beat us with

HIA 247

PRIVATE

1

PRIVATE

a strap. I never tried to run away again. If you did something wrong you always got beaten with a strap.

4. We slept in dormitories in Nazareth Lodge. My brother [NL 64] used to wet the bed and he used to get beaten for this by the nun in charge of his dormitory. I cannot recall her name. I would just stand there and watch. This was hard for me and it went on for some time. I think there were four dormitories in Nazareth Lodge. The helper in charge of our group was called [REDACTED]. The nuns would beat you with a strap, especially [SR 34] if they thought you had done something wrong or misbehaved. It was a tough regime. My time in Nazareth Lodge was not all bad. We had sports activities to keep us occupied. I also did Irish dancing.
5. The only visit I ever received was from [REDACTED] my sister. My grandfather or my Uncle [REDACTED] never came to visit. I went to school in Nazareth Lodge. My teacher was [NL 65] but sometimes [SR 34] or the other nuns taught us.
6. During the summer we went to John Fern's farm in [REDACTED] for two weeks. I had a great time there and they had an old bicycle which I used to cycle to Warrenpoint and back. I remember John's brother and his girlfriend used to take us to the beach and it was a fantastic time. I got in touch with Mr Fern a number of years ago when I was over in Ireland on a visit to my relatives. I did not speak to him about me negative experiences in care but it was good to catch up with him and he was glad to hear about how I was getting on in life.
7. We got up at the same time every morning, had a shower in the wash room and then went to mass. I used to serve mass as an altar boy and I sang in the choir. We had chores to do and we had to polish the hallway wooden floor. We used to put rags on our feet and dance up and down to polish the floor. At Christmas time the local firemen and one of the doctors at the top of the Ravenhill Road would have parties for us and we would get spoiled with cakes and sweets.
8. I was never sexually abused at Nazareth Lodge.

1 into Nazareth Lodge, you found that upsetting and
2 I think you said to me earlier you had not done anything
3 wrong. Why did you have to be put into a place like
4 this?

5 You record in paragraph 3 that you tried to run away
6 on one occasion and the consequences of that was for
7 SR34 to beat you with a strap. I was asking you whether
8 you remembered was that a strap -- was it a belt that
9 was worn round her waist that she used or was it
10 a separate strap. Your recollection is both were
11 available, and you don't remember which was used.

12 **A. That's correct, yes.**

13 Q. I asked you where you had been hit and how often and
14 your response to me was you were hit anywhere.
15 Presumably the idea of this was to punish you
16 sufficiently that you didn't run away again.

17 **A. That's correct, yes.**

18 Q. You say at the top of paragraph 3 -- at the top of
19 page 606, just the last sentence of paragraph 3 if did
20 you something wrong, you were always beaten with
21 a strap. I want to ask you how many nuns did that? Was
22 it just SR34 used the strap to beat you or were there
23 other nuns who did the same on you or other boys?

24 **A. The other nuns done it as well. We were beaten.**

25 Q. Is there --

PRIVATE

called [REDACTED] NL 4 [REDACTED]. The lay workers were evil, even worse than the nuns. I remember [REDACTED] NL 4 [REDACTED] and another lay worker would come round our dormitories at night time and if you weren't sleeping they would take you out to a big washroom where they would make you sit until you were tired and then you would go back to bed. I would pretend to sleep when they walk around the dormitory so I wouldn't be sent to the washroom. I remember one night when I had a bad cough [REDACTED] NL 5 [REDACTED] came in and slapped me across the face and made me cough into the pillow.

4. The main nun was [REDACTED] SR 34 [REDACTED]. She was in charge of the St. Joseph's group but she took it upon herself to be in charge of everything. She was the worst nun. She was an evil bully. I remember [REDACTED] SR 34 [REDACTED] taking us for communion practice in the chapel. We were at the altar rail. She told me I wasn't opening my mouth wide enough and she hit me so hard across the face that I landed in the aisle. I could never understand how she could do that in a chapel which was a sacred place. I was an altar boy and I knew that if I did anything wrong she would hit me. She used any excuse to beat me. If you did anything wrong, no matter how trivial, she would give you a time to be in the dining room. You were lined up and had to wait your turn to be hit. She would hit us with a strap. She also called the boys derogatory names. She called me "button mouth".
5. I got used to the beatings but the comments that the nuns made about my grandparents always upset me more. I had maternal grandparents who were still alive and they came to visit us every Sunday. My grandfather was blind and my grandmother had to take him everywhere. They would always bring us something like apples or oranges. The nuns, particularly [REDACTED] SR 34 [REDACTED], would call them names for being poor and they would take whatever my grandparents brought away from us. I think they threw it in the bin. When my grandparents visited, the nuns, particularly [REDACTED] SR 34 [REDACTED], would make them feel unwelcome and accuse them of making a mess of the room they were in. They were so rude to my grandparents that I almost didn't want them to visit. The worst part was the decisions that were made without considering them. There was a man and

PRIVATE

has caused me enormous grief as well as communication and employment problems resulting in financial hardship my entire life.

7. A particularly bleak and miserable experience in Nazareth Lodge occurred when I was about seven or eight years old. I think I had measles, mumps or chicken pox and I was left alone in isolation for days. I never saw a doctor and apart from food being brought in and left for me, nobody spoke to me or gave me any care or comfort. I felt profound despair, fear and loneliness. I still feel haunted by that period. One day I was playing on the merry-go-round at Nazareth Lodge when one of the wood swings which was broken swung into my face and cut me just below my right eye. I still have a scar to this day. I never saw a doctor or nurse whilst in the Lodge.
8. One of the most painful punishments dished out by the nuns was the beating of my fingertips with a wooden ruler. The nuns would grab my hand and squeeze the fingers all bunched up together until they went red and then strike them across the fingertips with a ruler. The pain was terrible and it was done with viciousness especially in winter when our hands were so cold, so they could inflict the greatest pain and generate fear.
9. **SR 34** was the most terrifying nun at Nazareth Lodge. She was an aggressive bully and she was the biggest nun. She was always yelling at the children and punching us with closed fists. She also boxed our ears. She had a nasty, angry face and seeing her coming up the corridor made you shrink back against the wall to try and not be noticed. **SR 152** seemed kinder but she was upstairs with the big boys and I didn't see her very much. She was more of a friend to us and taught us how to play rounders. She appeared to be more modern than the other nuns and maybe she knew that the way we were being treated was not right.
10. During one particular incident **SR 71** belted me with her fists and for weeks afterwards slapped me about and shouted at me every time she saw me. In the Lodge we all watched a Paul Robeson film about slavery. One day some visitors came in to Nazareth Lodge while two others and I were on our hands

1 aware of, though not from NL63. Can I ask you to
2 explain to the Inquiry where you did come across that
3 type of punishment?

4 **A. Yes. That type of punishment was handed out by SR34,**
5 **who was the principal of the school, and there was one**
6 **time I remember being in her classroom and she was**
7 **teaching us -- her along with SR71 were teaching**
8 **"Morning has -- Morning has broken", and I remember one**
9 **of the guys for whatever reason -- I don't know why it**
10 **was -- but SR34 went over to him and lifted him up by**
11 **the cheeks.**

12 **Q.** There has been suggestion to the Inquiry that as well as
13 the lifting up by the cheeks, there was a swinging round
14 went with it.

15 **A. That's correct. I mean, what I will say about her is**
16 **she was of the wrong temperament, and we did discuss**
17 **that in there. You know, she was working 24/7, and when**
18 **she did calm down, she was a lovely person, and I think**
19 **deep down she regretted what she did.**

20 **Q.** So to try and -- she was also someone who utilised the
21 ruler?

22 **A. That's correct, yes.**

23 **Q.** She was also someone who utilised the cane?

24 **A. More the ruler.**

25 **Q.** More the ruler?

5. It has been alleged that when a child wet their bed Sister would slap them and throw the wet sheets over them before subjecting them to a cold bath. It may have occurred that children were punished for wetting the bed and this was not acceptable behaviour.
6. [REDACTED] was held in very high esteem by many of the former children. This was most evident by the great number that attended Sister's funeral in Donegal to offer their condolences. Sister had a heart as big as herself and showed warm compassion to vulnerable people. . As Sister died seventeen years ago we cannot seek her own recollection of the children involved nor ask her to respond to the allegations that have been made against her.

Statement of Truth

I believe that the facts stated in this witness statement are true.

Signed [REDACTED]

Dated 28 November 2014

HIA REF: [NL 4]
NAME: []
DATE: []

THE INQUIRY INTO HISTORICAL INSTITUTIONAL ABUSE 1922 TO 1995

Witness Statement of [REDACTED] – NL 4

1. I was born in Belfast on [REDACTED]. As a teenager I considered the possibility of becoming a nun. I had some contact with the Sisters of Nazareth and I went to Nazareth Lodge Children's Home on the Ormeau Road, Belfast for some work experience at the beginning of 1956. I recall I worked with the toddlers who were children up to the age of 4. The Sisters of Nazareth had no training facility for nuns in Belfast and so after a period of approximately six months, I entered the convent in Hammersmith, London to train as a nun. This was in July 1956. I went through the initial stage of being a postulant and then a novice but I then decided not to continue and I left at the end of 1959. I was homesick and wanted to return to Belfast.
2. With the passage of time it is difficult for me to recall the precise dates of my work history but I can say that I worked in Nazareth Lodge (the Boys' Home) for a number of periods up to 1975. I worked for periods of time in Liverpool, Manchester and I worked in the USA as a domestic help. In all, I worked in the USA for four separate periods but no longer than a year on each occasion. I also at one stage entered a convent in Wales as a novice nun but left after 1 ½ years. At some other point in time I entered the Mercy Sisters as a postulant in Hull, Yorkshire but again I left after 1 ½ years. I found it difficult to settle in England and this is why I kept returning home. With the assistance of my medical records I have been able to identify periods of time during these years from 1956 until 1975 when I was definitely living outside Northern Ireland. In July 1956 for instance I was living in the convent in Hammersmith, London. In November 1957 I was registered with a GP in Prestwich, Manchester. In March 1963 I attended the Royal Gwent Hospital and my address then was St. Michael's Convent, Crickhowell in Wales and again when attending hospital clinics in September 1963 and in January 1964, my home address was still recorded as St. Michael's Convent Crickhowell. There are medical records dated 20th April 1972, 16th October 1972 and 23rd July 1973 when my address is noted as Prestwich, Manchester. There are a number of records during 1974 and 1975 in which my address is given as Nazareth House, Crosby, Liverpool. In 1975 I went to work in South Africa and stayed there almost continuously until 1991 when I returned to Belfast.
3. I have a number of testimonials and references which I obtained in connection with my various applications for employment and these confirm my irregular periods of employment at Nazareth Lodge in Belfast. The first is dated 26th August 1968 and is signed by [REDACTED] of Nazareth Lodge in Belfast and refers to my work as a House Mother for the past two years. The next reference is from Kiddies Kingdom Nursery School in Johannesburg and is stamp dated 11th August 1975. This confirms my employment as a nursery school assistant. A third is dated 23rd March 1978 and is signed by [REDACTED] and refers to my work during the 1960s with under privileged children.

1 provided your board and keep and you received a very
2 small wage. I was asking you about what exactly you did
3 earn. You said at first in 1956 you were given 10
4 shillings.

5 **A. That's correct, yes.**

6 Q. That's per week?

7 **A. Yes.**

8 Q. Then as an 18-year-old you remember getting 2 pounds per
9 week.

10 **A. 2 pounds a week.**

11 Q. Sorry. The 10 shillings was an 18-year-old. That went
12 up eventually to 2 pounds per week.

13 **A. Yes, eventually.**

14 Q. You said there was a period of time when you worked in
15 the baby home.

16 **A. At night-time.**

17 Q. So that involved night shifts?

18 **A. Yes.**

19 Q. At that stage you were getting 2.50 pounds per week?

20 **A. That's correct, yes.**

21 Q. You also when you were -- you say that you normally
22 stayed overnight in staff accommodation.

23 "Initially the staff members shared an attic room
24 and some time later proper staff quarters were
25 provided."

4. The next one is dated 18th November 1975 and is signed by SR 47 of Nazareth Lodge and it states I worked for short periods as an assistant House Mother from July 1974 to September 1975. [REDACTED] then wrote a further reference for me which is dated 3rd May 1978 and refers to my work as a House Mother in Nazareth Lodge.

5. I am also enclosing two further references regarding my employment in South Africa. The first is dated 18th November 1980 from St. Angela's Ursuline Convent and the second is dated 1st December 1990 from City Deep Adult Education Centre. I also have a number of certificates for Child Care courses which I undertook in South Africa after 1975 as I preferred to work with young children, particularly those who were disadvantaged.

6. I would estimate that during the period between 1956 and 1975 I would have worked in Nazareth for less than half of this period and my best estimate is that if I totaled up all the periods I worked in Nazareth Lodge it would be between 7 and 9 years.

7. A number of allegations of child cruelty have been made against me. I was interviewed by the police about these allegations on 8th May 1996 and again on 19th October 2012. A number of people have also made statements to the HIA Inquiry. I deny I used excessive force or that I was cruel to any child. I also deny the sole allegation made by one former resident that I indecently assaulted him. Before I comment on the specific allegations, I intend to give some background information and describe the work I carried out at Nazareth Lodge.

8. Most of my work was with boys of primary school age, between the ages of 4 and 11. At some stage during the 1960s when I returned to Nazareth Lodge the decision had been taken to keep brothers and sisters together and so I would have had some limited contact with girls, but the majority of children I supervised and looked after were boys.

9. I was employed by the Sisters of Nazareth. They provided my board and keep and I received a very small wage. I normally stayed overnight in staff accommodation. Initially the staff members shared an attic room and sometime later proper staff quarters were provided. This was separate from the dormitories where the children slept.

10. I received no instructions or training during my work in Nazareth Lodge. I was given no information about any particular child. I worked under the direction of a nun who was in charge of each of the four groups of boys. I did not attend any meetings and no personal details about individual children were discussed with me. I did not meet social workers or get information from them when they called to visit children at the Home from time to time. I also received no guidance or instructions in relation to the discipline of children. When a child was unruly or misbehaved, I would have sometimes slapped them with my open hand. Normally I would have slapped them on their hands or their legs. On occasion I may have slapped them on their bottom. This was a spontaneous thing. I did not use excessive force or cause any bruises or marks on a child's body. I also used a ruler from time to time to slap a child but this would normally have been one or two slaps and again I never used excessive force. I did not carry the ruler around with me but would have picked it up if it was lying around. However more frequently I would have used my open hand to slap a child for misbehaviour.

11. In common with the other House Mothers, I worked very long hours at Nazareth Lodge. The day would begin at around 6am when I got up and after dressing I would go to the dormitory to waken the children. We all went to morning mass and then supervised the children at breakfast. After this the children would help us make their beds before going to school. If there was some spare time, I would ask the children to do other simple chores. Some of the older children would have been provided with cloths and told to polish the floors. They would have done this by putting the cloths on their feet and moving up and down. They did not have to get down onto their knees. This would only have been for 15 or 20 minutes. When the children were at school, I would have carried out general housework. This would include cleaning and sometimes ironing clothes. At mealtimes I would have supervised the children.

12. After school I would have continued to supervise the children and they normally went to bed between 6pm and 7pm. As some of the children were known to regularly wet their beds, I would have taken it in turns, along with the nun in charge of the group, to waken those children at around 9pm and bring them to the toilet close to the dormitory. If the bedclothes were wet, they would be changed and the soiled bedclothes left in a pile until the morning time. I would only have wakened up those children who were known to bed wet frequently. After this I had no further contact with the children during the night. A nun would have slept in a small cubicle or annex in the dormitory. Each of the four groups had their own dormitory and the nun in charge slept close by. If there were any further problems during the night, the nun would have dealt with it. My sleeping quarters were some distance away.

13. On Saturdays the children were sometimes taken to the Curzon Cinema on the Ormeau Road which was several hundred yards away. As the nuns would be out collecting money, I would sometimes have to supervise between 80 and 100 children by myself and bring them to the cinema on the Ormeau Road. I was always worried that something would happen to a child while I was taking such a large number out of the Home but thankfully nothing untoward ever occurred and I was always relieved when they came back safely. During the summer the children were taken away for a holiday for a number of weeks to Ballyhornan and if I was working there at that time I would have gone as well. There would have been nuns and other staff members there to supervise the children and I always recall the children were happy to get away during this time.

[REDACTED] HIA reference 16.

14. [REDACTED] made a statement to the Inquiry about his time in care at Nazareth Lodge and the police interviewed me on two separate occasions about his allegations.

15. HIA 16 came to Nazareth Lodge around 1959 and stayed until 1967. I was working at Nazareth Lodge for part of the time he was in the Home. For substantial periods of time, I was living and working in England and Wales, although there were periods when I was working as a House Mother and I recall HIA 16.

16. In his statement to the Inquiry he alleges I used to beat him all the time. He said it was an almost daily occurrence. He alleges I used a rubber bat and struck him all over his body. He claimed I would go around all the groups bullying the boys and would hit them and call them names. He alleged I used to argue with the nuns and the other staff as well.

11. In common with the other House Mothers, I worked very long hours at Nazareth Lodge. The day would begin at around 6am when I got up and after dressing I would go to the dormitory to waken the children. We all went to morning mass and then supervised the children at breakfast. After this the children would help us make their beds before going to school. If there was some spare time, I would ask the children to do other simple chores. Some of the older children would have been provided with cloths and told to polish the floors. They would have done this by putting the cloths on their feet and moving up and down. They did not have to get down onto their knees. This would only have been for 15 or 20 minutes. When the children were at school, I would have carried out general housework. This would include cleaning and sometimes ironing clothes. At mealtimes I would have supervised the children.

12. After school I would have continued to supervise the children and they normally went to bed between 6pm and 7pm. As some of the children were known to regularly wet their beds, I would have taken it in turns, along with the nun in charge of the group, to waken those children at around 9pm and bring them to the toilet close to the dormitory. If the bedclothes were wet, they would be changed and the soiled bedclothes left in a pile until the morning time. I would only have wakened up those children who were known to bed wet frequently. After this I had no further contact with the children during the night. A nun would have slept in a small cubicle or annex in the dormitory. Each of the four groups had their own dormitory and the nun in charge slept close by. If there were any further problems during the night, the nun would have dealt with it. My sleeping quarters were some distance away.

13. On Saturdays the children were sometimes taken to the Curzon Cinema on the Ormeau Road which was several hundred yards away. As the nuns would be out collecting money, I would sometimes have to supervise between 80 and 100 children by myself and bring them to the cinema on the Ormeau Road. I was always worried that something would happen to a child while I was taking such a large number out of the Home but thankfully nothing untoward ever occurred and I was always relieved when they came back safely. During the summer the children were taken away for a holiday for a number of weeks to Ballyhornan and if I was working there at that time I would have gone as well. There would have been nuns and other staff members there to supervise the children and I always recall the children were happy to get away during this time.

[REDACTED] - HIA reference 16.

14. [REDACTED] made a statement to the Inquiry about his time in care at Nazareth Lodge and the police interviewed me on two separate occasions about his allegations.

15. HIA 16 came to Nazareth Lodge around 1959 and stayed until 1967. I was working at Nazareth Lodge for part of the time he was in the Home. For substantial periods of time, I was living and working in England and Wales, although there were periods when I was working as a House Mother and I recall HIA 16.

16. In his statement to the Inquiry he alleges I used to beat him all the time. He said it was an almost daily occurrence. He alleges I used a rubber bat and struck him all over his body. He claimed I would go around all the groups bullying the boys and would hit them and call them names. He alleged I used to argue with the nuns and the other staff as well.

1 **A. No, I think they just walked down. There wasn't much of**
2 **a distance between Nazareth Lodge and Nazareth House,**
3 **and the girls would have come down the Ravenhill Road**
4 **from the back of Nazareth House.**

5 Q. They were allowed to do that unaccompanied at that stage
6 that you remember?

7 **A. As far as I remember.**

8 Q. You didn't have anything to do with arranging such
9 visits or anything?

10 **A. No, not at all, no.**

11 Q. I was asking you about -- you have given us a picture of
12 how very busy your life was in Nazareth Lodge. I was
13 wondering if you ever had any time off. You know, apart
14 from this supposed recreation time when you were darning
15 socks, did you ever get days off?

16 **A. Yes, I got one day a week off and I would go home.**
17 **I would go home in the morning after we had had the beds**
18 **and that done and everything done, and then I would --**
19 NL 151 **sometimes would drive me home, because SR34**
20 **would give me a package of food to take home with me,**
21 **and then I would get the bus back in the evening, but**
22 **I was there a good part of the time, you know.**

23 Q. That was -- you were saying that you occasionally went
24 home on a Sunday, but the bus situation was difficult if
25 you didn't get a lift from NL 151 .

1 Can you just explain to the Panel what you remember
2 of her and her engagement with you?

3 A. Well, I first met NL4 when I was about -- let's say
4 about 8 or 9, roughly in or around that, and I had just
5 been returned from holiday. I had people that took me
6 out on holidays, and I had just returned, and all the
7 boys were going in for dinner, and I just arrived and,
8 of course, everybody made a fuss about me, and then they
9 were all shouting and kind of like screaming, "There's
10 HIA36. HIA36's back", you know, that type of way. All
11 I could hear was her shouting, "Who is making all that
12 noise?", but I couldn't see her, because she was round
13 the corner, and then eventually then she just pulled me
14 in by the hair in till the dining room, and she just
15 beat the life out of me, but the visitors that I had,
16 the people that had taken me out, were still in the
17 reception area, and I was in that bad a state that
18 I couldn't even go and say "Cheerio" to them, because
19 I was a very -- I had been -- she had beat me. She had
20 been over-excessive like, you know.

21 Q. And did you go to a dormitory then?

22 A. They put me -- just put me into the dormitory and
23 I never seen them.

24 Q. You didn't mention this to the Inquiry staff.

25 A. I didn't, no. I never mentioned it, because when I was

1 writing out my statement, you know, if I had to write
2 everything like, you know, it would be thicker than that
3 book there, you know, and I am just -- sort of like
4 separate incidents of different things, you know, and
5 that was just because you mentioned this morning, you
6 know.

7 Q. Was that your only experience of her or your worst
8 experience of her --

9 A. No.

10 Q. -- or do you remember seeing her interact with other
11 boys?

12 A. I have seen her beating. She was really, really,
13 really, really wicked person and she should never have
14 been allowed to look after children, because she had
15 no -- she had zero tolerance of children, absolutely
16 zero tolerance.

17 Q. Is that something -- is what she was doing in terms of
18 the children --

19 A. Uh-huh.

20 Q. -- or what NL5 was doing in terms of the children -- did
21 any of the nuns know that was happening?

22 A. I wasn't aware of the nuns knowing. The only time
23 I ever remember the nuns was really in the school or in
24 the church or at, you know, some religious thing. The
25 nuns were -- it was all mostly lay staff that would have

1 done --

2 Q. The looking after --

3 A. -- the looking after you.

4 Q. -- part.

5 A. The nuns would have sort of -- they weren't -- they
6 weren't hands on. They would have maybe -- say on bath
7 night or something like that they would have helped out,
8 you know, maybe in that aspect, but, you know, you
9 didn't -- you didn't see an awful lot of -- there would
10 have been a nun slept in the dormitory, but she would
11 have come in when you were in bed and you were sleeping,
12 and, you know, I don't think they were aware of, you
13 know, how much people were getting, you know -- how much
14 abuse was -- not abuse; I don't really class it as abuse
15 -- how much physical violence there was towards
16 children, you know.

17 Q. But you draw a distinction between NL5 --

18 A. Uh-huh.

19 Q. -- and when she hit --

20 A. Yes.

21 Q. -- and NL4 and when she hit. They weren't on the same
22 level as far as you are concerned.

23 A. No, definitely not. NL4 was kind of I think used as,
24 you know -- like, you know, like the elite. If children
25 were going to -- stepping out of line, she was called to

1 deal with them, because all the kids were absolutely
2 scared of her, like. She was -- she was, like, pretty,
3 you know, frightening person, you know.

4 Q. Well, you mention in paragraph 14 of your statement,
5 HIA36, about bedwetting.

6 A. Uh-huh.

7 Q. You say that you didn't have a problem with that.

8 A. Uh-huh.

9 Q. You yourself did not wet the bed, but you recall what
10 happened to some boys who did --

11 A. Uh-huh. Uh-huh.

12 Q. -- and that's in two forms. You say they were beaten
13 for wetting the bed.

14 A. Uh-huh.

15 Q. Can you -- and if you can't, just say so -- can you
16 remember specific incidents of that or what form the
17 beatings took?

18 A. I don't remember anybody actually being beat for wetting
19 the bed now, but I knew of instances, like, you know,
20 kids saying they were beat because they wet the bed, but
21 I didn't actually, you know, witness that, you know. It
22 would have been the talk maybe in the dining halls
23 somebody had wet the bed, you know, and they had to
24 stand with a sheet over their head, you know.

25 Q. Well, that was the second point I was going to ask you

PRIVATE

7. I had a sister called [REDACTED] in Nazareth House but the nuns never told me. My friend [HIA 19] had a sister there too but nobody told him either. One day [HIA 19] granny told him to walk up to Nazareth House and he would see a girl waving so he did. He asked his granny who the girl was and she told him it was his sister [NHB 12]. The nuns never told either of us we had a sister, they kept it all quiet.
8. I went to school onsite in Nazareth Lodge but they didn't teach you much. There was spelling and sums but I was hopeless at it. I couldn't read or write, I still can't to this day. I can only write my name. I didn't like school in Nazareth Lodge.
9. The food at Nazareth Lodge wasn't up to much. It was like semolina or frogs spawn. I did not like the food, it was rotten but you had to eat it or else you got hit across the face by the civilian staff [NL 5] or [NL 4]. On the day of your First Holy Communion you got a fried egg but that was the only time. You were lucky to get a fried egg.
10. The clothes at the Lodge were just shorts and a t-shirt. There was no such thing as jeans, just the wee shorts.
11. The nuns I remember are [SR 47] and [SR 34]. [SR 34] was really bad. She hit me on many occasions with a stick, a strap or a hand. There used to be an open day when people would come up to see us. [SR 34] would say if she saw anybody begging from them, she would give us a good thrashing. On one occasion, one of the visiting nuns gave me money, threepence or sixpence. The next day [SR 34] got me by the cheeks with her big nails and lifted me clean off the floor by the cheeks. She did this to me whenever I did anything wrong or misbehaved. It would leave marks on my face.
12. [NL 4] was the worst member of staff. If you wet the bed she would put you in these big washing machines, put the lid down and pretend to turn it on. She did this to me a few times and I would be screaming 'I'll not do it

PRIVATE

again'. She did this to others as well. Nobody liked [NL 4] The next day you wouldn't wet your bed because you were so frightened. Anyone who wet the bed would be forced to stand in a line separate to everyone else. I recall that [NL 4] came up one week dressed as a nun. She wore the full nun uniform and carried rosary beads. Two weeks later she was dressed as normal, as a staff worker.

13. [NL 4] used to make us walk up a big long hall in the Lodge with cloths on our feet to shine the floor. I remember we used orange wax to shine it. We would chant '1, 2, 3, 4, take the marks off the floor'. For this to be done perfect all of the wax would have to be rubbed right into the floors and not leave a shoe print if you walked on it. Every time [NL 4] walked up she would say 'Oh hold on, I can see marks on that, go back down and start again'. Then she would start hitting you. She would slap you and hit you a dig in the face. There was about eight of us all in a line and she would have us all walking up and down shining the floor. I think some of the other children were tortured by [NL 4] she was a wicked one.
14. I feared [NL 4] and I didn't like living like that at all. Her job was to look after us. She never showed me any love or affection, she never taught me any family values or how to do things. I used to pull clumps of my hair out in Nazareth Lodge because of the stress of being in there and the fear of being abused.
15. I remember one boy, [NL 28] who loved the hens and one day the nuns just threw him in the hen hut and left him there. I don't know why they did this but they left him there for about a day.
16. [NL 5] was another civilian member of staff at the Lodge. She wasn't as bad as [NL 4] but she hit me too. She would ask you a question and if you couldn't read or write or you got the wrong number, she would hit you across the knuckles with the side of a wooden ruler. It was really sore; you would really have felt it.

PRIVATE

bought me a hard back mass book that I was reading and all of a sudden I was pulled from the bench and she trailed me down the passage in the chapel and started kicking me in the face. She thought I was reading a comic book. She battered my face black and blue. She took the book from me and I was crying.

17. I told my grandmother when she came up on the Saturday. My grandmother told the social worker but I cannot recall their name. I remember **SR 34** coming over to me and saying you reported this to your grandmother, she said you think you had it worse, well you see the next time it will be worse again. I was living in fear again. It was just basically fear all the time growing up. After that she never beat me as bad as she did in the chapel but she did smack me on the ears an awful lot.
18. My sister was in Nazareth House and I wasn't allowed to see her. When I was about seven or eight my grandmother made arrangements for **NHB 12** to come out at a certain time at lunch to wave at me and I was in the other end of the field at our school. I used to say to the boys "that's my sister waving at me". Most lunch times we were out waiting but that was as much as we were allowed to see each other which was sad but at least I was happy that I had a sister.
19. On school mornings I would get up and go down to the dining room. There were four groups partitioned off and we had breakfast. I used to get a boiled egg and toast. We went off to school but I don't remember a lot about school. I can't remember the lunches or the dinners very well. I just remember being hungry most of the time.
20. On a Sunday we all wore a brown corduroy suit to mass. They made us work hard on weekends. They cut cloths from blankets and put them on our feet and on Saturdays we cleaned the big passageway from one end of the hallway. We used to polish that with our feet for at least a couple of hours. I was seven or eight at the time.
21. There was a massive copper machine in the laundry in Nazareth Lodge and if you wet the bed they would scare you by saying that if you wet the bed again you would be thrown in with the sheets. Two lay members of staff, **NL 5**

PRIVATE

NL 5 and NL 4 were employed to look after the children. They used to take us into the laundry and they would lift us and put us into the machine and close the lids for a few minutes and say that they were going to turn it on. They obviously never did but it left you in fear and squealing, yelling and crying. It gave us nightmares. I think they did this as a deterrent to those boys who wet the bed so that they would not have to clean their wet sheets.

22. If you wet the bed it would not be changed until the next morning and we got hit and smacked as well because we wet the bed. I remember this from I was about seven but I would say it happened at an earlier age. I can only remember from six or seven.
23. I remember years ago at Nazareth Lodge being taken out once or twice by people who kept us in their homes over Christmas. They kept me for a few weeks and gave me a lot of clothes. I remember they were called [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] but I cannot recall their surname. I remember getting a big box of toys and clothes and they were confiscated straight away on my return as we weren't allowed to keep them. I don't know what they did with them and I do not know why we were not allowed to keep them.
24. SR 47 used to sleep in one of the small cells in the corner of the dormitory and then there was another dorm next door with a door walking right across. I remember when I was about seven or eight telling her about the people who had been doing bad things to us and she used to shout at me. She never hit me but she just said go away and stop telling tales, they're not like that. She didn't listen because we were very young and she knew we didn't like the charge boys and so she thought we were just making up stories.
25. I have been told about these brothers and what they used to do to us in later years. I can't remember this but have been told that they used to line us up as children and mess with our private parts to get an erection. They put flannels on top of our penis to see if our penis was hard. I can't remember that incident at all, I might have blocked it out but a friend of mine, [REDACTED] has told me that.

PRIVATE

6. One day my group was walking down the driveway with [REDACTED] SR 47 [REDACTED] The boiler man NL 116 [REDACTED] was over on the grounds and I pointed him out to Sister SR 47 [REDACTED] and I just said 'that's that man who done dirty things to me'. I don't remember getting a reaction from her.
7. I was also sexually abused by [REDACTED] at Nazareth Lodge. This was after the sexual abuse by NL 116 [REDACTED] I was about six or seven years old. It happened on a couple of occasions. He was called [REDACTED] He had dark hair and he was in his late twenties or early thirties at the time. He lived in the projector room up the hall in the Lodge. The room was accessed by a stone staircase with a cubby hole at the bottom where all the cleaning stuff was stored. [REDACTED] assisted [REDACTED] who was the head maintenance person. [REDACTED] took me up into his bedroom and he felt all around my penis. He made me feel his penis by grabbing my hand and placing it on his penis. I think his trousers were down. This occurred on several occasions. I didn't understand what was happening but I knew he would give me sweets for doing it.
8. I was abused by [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] When I was about 8 years old they were about 11 years old, maybe a bit older. One day they took me up on the stage in the hall where we watched TV. Furniture was being stored on the stage. They took me under a table and then they started to fight with each other. One said 'he's mine I had him first'. I think it was [REDACTED] that said this. Then they took my trousers and pants down and started touching my penis and testicles. I was really frightened. They both had their trousers down at the time but I don't recall them touching each other. [REDACTED] told me I had the nicest bum in the home. I was also abused by [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] individually a few times around the henhouses. I was told by the police that [REDACTED] was arrested recently for sexual offences and I believe [REDACTED] ended up in Thailand.
9. There were two civilian staff who worked in the Lodge. They were called [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] They patrolled the dorms to check if you were asleep. I saw [REDACTED] hit people with her hand. [REDACTED] messed his

PRIVATE

bed one night and I saw [REDACTED] rubbing his face in the mess. She made an example of him. [REDACTED] left the Lodge. Everyone was afraid of her and they cheered in the refectory when they saw her leave with her bags. However she returned about six months later dressed as a nun. I knew to stay out of her way in order to avoid being beaten. On one occasion she called my mother a 'tart' and said 'who does she think she is?' and punched me on the shoulder.

10. During the holidays we used to stay with families. When I was about eight or nine years old I went out at Christmas to a family who had a son about thirteen or fourteen years old. I had to share a bed with him. He tried to force me to have sex with him. I remember crying and screaming. He was hitting me as well as doing other things. I don't know name of the family.
11. I remember the food in the Lodge was basic. We ate things like vegetable roll, fried bread and powered potatoes which came in big sacks. There used to be a market in the city centre called 'Mays market' and the nuns would go down two or three times a week. At the end of the day people in the market would give the nuns food. They were getting the leftovers from the market. Buns were also donated every Sunday by Kennedy's Bakery. I remember being hungry all the time. Sometimes we went down to the playing fields at the back of the home. We picked a green leaf from the hedgerows called 'salix'. You could heat the leaf on the radiator and eat them. They were nice.
12. I think a lot of the clothes were donated to the home. Also the toys at Christmas were donated. After Christmas the toys were taken off us and the nuns told us that they were being sent to the babies in Africa who really needed them.
13. I never had any complaints about the nuns. The nuns were good and I have nothing bad to say about them. I was happy with them. They made sacrifices for us. I just suppose they didn't see what was going on. Even today I really miss them. I have missed them since I left Nazareth Lodge.

PRIVATE

bed one night and I saw [REDACTED] rubbing his face in the mess. She made an example of him. [REDACTED] left the Lodge. Everyone was afraid of her and they cheered in the refectory when they saw her leave with her bags. However she returned about six months later dressed as a nun. I knew to stay out of her way in order to avoid being beaten. On one occasion she called my mother a 'tart' and said 'who does she think she is?' and punched me on the shoulder.

10. During the holidays we used to stay with families. When I was about eight or nine years old I went out at Christmas to a family who had a son about thirteen or fourteen years old. I had to share a bed with him. He tried to force me to have sex with him. I remember crying and screaming. He was hitting me as well as doing other things. I don't know name of the family.
11. I remember the food in the Lodge was basic. We ate things like vegetable roll, fried bread and powered potatoes which came in big sacks. There used to be a market in the city centre called 'Mays market' and the nuns would go down two or three times a week. At the end of the day people in the market would give the nuns food. They were getting the leftovers from the market. Buns were also donated every Sunday by Kennedy's Bakery. I remember being hungry all the time. Sometimes we went down to the playing fields at the back of the home. We picked a green leaf from the hedgerows called 'salix'. You could heat the leaf on the radiator and eat them. They were nice.
12. I think a lot of the clothes were donated to the home. Also the toys at Christmas were donated. After Christmas the toys were taken off us and the nuns told us that they were being sent to the babies in Africa who really needed them.
13. I never had any complaints about the nuns. The nuns were good and I have nothing bad to say about them. I was happy with them. They made sacrifices for us. I just suppose they didn't see what was going on. Even today I really miss them. I have missed them since I left Nazareth Lodge.

PRIVATE

lovely. However, that image changed when I realised she was actually a frightening woman. There was a boy called **DL 157** who had a problem with wetting the bed. Looking back with adult hindsight I think he might have had a learning disability. **NL 4**'s way of dealing with bed wetting was to shove a flannel into his mouth and severely beat him in front of everyone in the dormitory. She told us not to tell or she would do the same to us.

15. I remember one Sunday my father had come to collect me as had been arranged when I was in the Sacred Heart group. I went to change before we went to see my sisters. **NL 4** called me down to the refectory and asked me who told me I could change. She was obviously annoyed that she had not been asked if the Sunday visits with my father could still take place after I had moved into her group. She punched me, pulled me by the collar and threw me about. She told me to go and change again. My father asked me what had happened and I would not tell him. He insisted and eventually I told him. I am told that he went in to the refectory, confronted her and knocked her over. **NL 4** left me alone for a while after that.
16. I do not know how but my father got a job painting around the home so I would have seen him quite often. When I was ten he left and I never saw him again. He moved to England. I knew he had planned to go but I didn't know when he was going. He wrote to me when I was in Nazareth Lodge and Rubane House but I never saw him again. He has since passed away. After my father left **NL 4** reverted back to form. If she considered that you had stepped out of line, for example not making your bed to her satisfaction or if she thought you were being cheeky, she would hit you. If you did not suck up to her by saying "I really like you **NL 4**" or "you are really kind **NL 4**" she would hit you.
17. We used to go to Ballyhornan during the summer. There was a shop nearby which had a yard behind it where there were empty lemonade bottles. Some of us, myself, **HIA 21**, **DL 95** and two other boys, worked out that if you took the empty lemonade bottles back to the shop they would give you 1p. However the shopkeeper must have worked out what we were doing and told on us. **NL 4** went mad and shouted at everyone. Later that night when

1 "Looking back with adult hindsight, I think he may
2 have had a learning disability. NL4's way of dealing
3 with the bedwetting was to shove a flannel into his
4 mouth and severely beat him in front of everyone in the
5 dormitory. She told us not to tell or she would do the
6 same to us."

7 **A. Uh-huh.**

8 Q. Paragraph 15 you go on to complain that one Sunday when
9 your father --

10 **A. Sorry. Could I stop up? My recollection is this was**
11 **one incident. It wasn't something that happened**
12 **frequently. The boy had a bloody nose and a split lip**
13 **and we were told to say that he was fighting or he fell**
14 **down the stairs or the same would happen to us. Sorry.**

15 Q. I am going to -- I should -- I explained to you that NL4
16 has given a statement to the Inquiry. I am going to
17 come back to deal with what she says in response, but
18 I am just going to cover the allegations you make
19 against her first of all.

20 At paragraph 15 then you say there was one Sunday
21 your father came to collect you as had been arranged --

22 **A. Yes.**

23 Q. -- when I was in the Sacred Heart group. This was
24 before you'd moved over to NL4's group?

25 **A. Yes, I think so, yes.**

PRIVATE

lovely. However, that image changed when I realised she was actually a frightening woman. There was a boy called **DL 157** who had a problem with wetting the bed. Looking back with adult hindsight I think he might have had a learning disability. **NL 4**'s way of dealing with bed wetting was to shove a flannel into his mouth and severely beat him in front of everyone in the dormitory. She told us not to tell or she would do the same to us.

15. I remember one Sunday my father had come to collect me as had been arranged when I was in the Sacred Heart group. I went to change before we went to see my sisters. **NL 4** called me down to the refectory and asked me who told me I could change. She was obviously annoyed that she had not been asked if the Sunday visits with my father could still take place after I had moved into her group. She punched me, pulled me by the collar and threw me about. She told me to go and change again. My father asked me what had happened and I would not tell him. He insisted and eventually I told him. I am told that he went in to the refectory, confronted her and knocked her over. **NL 4** left me alone for a while after that.
16. I do not know how but my father got a job painting around the home so I would have seen him quite often. When I was ten he left and I never saw him again. He moved to England. I knew he had planned to go but I didn't know when he was going. He wrote to me when I was in Nazareth Lodge and Rubane House but I never saw him again. He has since passed away. After my father left **NL 4** reverted back to form. If she considered that you had stepped out of line, for example not making your bed to her satisfaction or if she thought you were being cheeky, she would hit you. If you did not suck up to her by saying "I really like you **NL 4**" or "you are really kind **NL 4**" she would hit you.
17. We used to go to Ballyhornan during the summer. There was a shop nearby which had a yard behind it where there were empty lemonade bottles. Some of us, myself, **HIA 21**, **DL 95** and two other boys, worked out that if you took the empty lemonade bottles back to the shop they would give you 1p. However the shopkeeper must have worked out what we were doing and told on us. **NL 4** went mad and shouted at everyone. Later that night when

PRIVATE

were a lot of older boys and I found that intimidating. I do not remember any love or any stimulation.

5. I remember being punished a couple of times when I was about five or six years old for something trivial by being put in a freezing cold bath by **SR 118**. I was placed in the cold water and then the cold water was poured over my head about half a dozen times. I remember one occasion I was punished in this manner along with another boy called **HIA 427** who was my age. He had special needs and was not always in control of his bowels. I was punished first. **SR 118** then ordered me out of the bath and told **HIA 427** to get undressed. I realised **HIA 427** had soiled his underpants. **SR 118** took his soiled underpants and violently and cruelly rubbed them in his face. Until my dying day I will never forget what happened or what **SR 118** was capable of. **HIA 427** and I were only about seven years old and the experience has had a profound effect on me. I visited **HIA 427** when he was dying of cancer. Sadly he passed away on 25th February 2014 and I am glad to have had the opportunity to see him before he died. He was a lovely man and an old friend.
6. I also remember a night when **SR 34** made everyone in our dormitory get out of bed and kneel in the corridor for an hour. It was very cold. I do not know why we had to do this but I think it was because someone had done something wrong. **SR 34** must have realised how unfair she had been to us as she gave us all a chocolate sweet before we went to bed that night.
7. There was a lay staff member called **NL 4**. One day we were going in to the refectory for our dinner. There was a new kitchen being built and I was fascinated to see what had been built. I was looking in through the half door. I could hear **NL 4** saying to hurry up and the next minute she slapped me across the face from behind and knocked me off balance. It stung for several hours afterwards. There was no warning and it was a terrible experience. She was not suitable for that job because of her vile temper.

1 Q. Was this -- if I can ask you, HIA183, was this type of
2 group punishment a normal thing or was this an unusual
3 thing?

4 A. This was an unusual thing actually. That was the only
5 thing I can recollect. It wasn't an occurrence, you
6 know.

7 Q. Afterwards you make the point that you feel she must
8 have regretted -- whatever the reason for it, the doing
9 of it she must have regretted, because she gave
10 everybody a sweet afterwards.

11 A. Well, she had a box of sweets and she told us to help
12 ourselves. So we all took a big box -- you know,
13 handful of. I think she realised she probably was in
14 the wrong. That was my only conclusion.

15 Q. She, like whoever was in your dorm before SR34 came
16 along, was in a cubicle or had a cubicle in the corner
17 --

18 A. That's correct.

19 Q. -- with a window and a curtain.

20 A. That's correct.

21 Q. Would she have checked on you from time to time? Can
22 you remember her checking?

23 A. No.

24 Q. You don't?

25 A. No.

1 Q. I was asking you whether in her time older boys were in
2 charge of you in the dorm in addition to helping SR34.
3 You had said to me you don't remember there being older
4 boys.

5 **A. I don't recollect that no, Joe.**

6 Q. You then talk about another individual, who was a lay
7 civilian worker who came into the home, which was NL4.
8 She is "NL4". Again all the names we use are not to be
9 repeated outside the chamber. In paragraph 7, SNB-522,
10 you describe an occasion whenever she was involved with
11 you. Now she was not involved with your group --

12 **A. No.**

13 Q. -- and was not someone that you met a lot in the home.
14 Is that fair?

15 **A. That's correct, yes.**

16 Q. But on this particular occasion there was a lining up
17 going on to go into the refectory.

18 **A. That's right.**

19 Q. And can you just explain to the Panel what happened on
20 that occasion that led you to be involved with NL4?

21 **A. Well, I do remember now we were -- I think it was after**
22 **school we were going for our tea break, sandwiches, and**
23 **at that particular time I remember there was -- there**
24 **was a kitchen being built at that particular time and**
25 **the kitchen had been completed, and I remember looking**

1 at this -- it was a half moon door, and I remember
2 looking through. I was mesmerised by the building, you
3 know. I was about 9 or 10 at that particular time.
4 They spent quite a few years building it. I remember
5 sitting looking it with awe, you know. "This is great",
6 you know. The next minute this person behind me asked
7 me to move on and I looked around again and the
8 next minute she just give me one big smack and I was off
9 balance.

10 Q. Where was the smack, HIA183?

11 A. It was right on the face, on the cheek and it stung. It
12 really, really, stung and it just knocked me off
13 balance. At that particular time the baby home was
14 being built and I used to hear the men using the foul
15 language. So I just told her the f*** word. I told her
16 -- she asked me what did I say. I says, "I told you to
17 fuck off". So she asked me quite a few times and
18 I denied it. She says to me, "If you tell me what you
19 said, I'll give you sweets". So naturally I went -- my
20 eyes were bigger than my mouth, you know. So I told her
21 what I told her -- what I said.

22 I was to go out to that week-end, and she
23 reported --

24 Q. This is your involvement with that I will come
25 back to.

PRIVATE

lovely. However, that image changed when I realised she was actually a frightening woman. There was a boy called **DL 157** who had a problem with wetting the bed. Looking back with adult hindsight I think he might have had a learning disability. **NL 4**'s way of dealing with bed wetting was to shove a flannel into his mouth and severely beat him in front of everyone in the dormitory. She told us not to tell or she would do the same to us.

15. I remember one Sunday my father had come to collect me as had been arranged when I was in the Sacred Heart group. I went to change before we went to see my sisters. **NL 4** called me down to the refectory and asked me who told me I could change. She was obviously annoyed that she had not been asked if the Sunday visits with my father could still take place after I had moved into her group. She punched me, pulled me by the collar and threw me about. She told me to go and change again. My father asked me what had happened and I would not tell him. He insisted and eventually I told him. I am told that he went in to the refectory, confronted her and knocked her over. **NL 4** left me alone for a while after that.
16. I do not know how but my father got a job painting around the home so I would have seen him quite often. When I was ten he left and I never saw him again. He moved to England. I knew he had planned to go but I didn't know when he was going. He wrote to me when I was in Nazareth Lodge and Rubane House but I never saw him again. He has since passed away. After my father left **NL 4** reverted back to form. If she considered that you had stepped out of line, for example not making your bed to her satisfaction or if she thought you were being cheeky, she would hit you. If you did not suck up to her by saying "I really like you **NL 4**" or "you are really kind **NL 4**" she would hit you.
17. We used to go to Ballyhornan during the summer. There was a shop nearby which had a yard behind it where there were empty lemonade bottles. Some of us, myself, **HIA 21**, **DL 95** and two other boys, worked out that if you took the empty lemonade bottles back to the shop they would give you 1p. However the shopkeeper must have worked out what we were doing and told on us. **NL 4** went mad and shouted at everyone. Later that night when

PRIVATE

we were all in bed and she had worked out who the culprits were she went round to the culprits' beds and hit them with a small wooden bat while they were in their beds. She started with the other boys so I could hear them screaming and knew what was coming. I was terrified. She was extremely angry with me as I was the only culprit from her group. We slept in Nissan huts and the nuns slept somewhere else but I do not understand how the nuns did not hear the commotion.

18. I learned that the only way to survive was to not bring attention to myself.
19. The first Christmas I was in Nazareth Lodge I stayed with **NL 62** and **NL 61** **NL 61** I do not know how I was introduced to them. It was my only experience of real family life. They were lovely. I spent every Christmas after that with them. They are probably the reason I survived my time in care and they encouraged me after I left care. They had adopted four children from St Joseph's Baby Home. They wanted to adopt me but my father would not allow it. He would not even allow them to foster me. They befriended me and I remained close to them until they died. They attended my wedding and my daughter's christening. I think they knew that things were difficult for me in Nazareth Lodge but I would not tell them anything as I was too frightened.
20. When I was about ten I remember being on a television show called "Tommy's Toy Shop" with another boy from Nazareth Lodge. I was allowed to choose a toy from "Tommy's Toy Shop" and I choose a scalextric set. The other boy chose a big plastic truck. When we got back to Nazareth Lodge **NL 4** took my scalextric set off me and gave it to the other child and gave me the plastic truck. I felt that I was too old for the plastic truck so I gave it to **NL 3**
21. I was in the choir as I could sing. **SR 30** played the organ. There were four of us from the choir - myself, **HIA 132** **DL 94** and **HIA 56** **HIA 56** - who were invited to sing on a tea time television show called "Tea Time with Tommy". It was aired on television over Christmas when I was staying with **NL 61 / NL 62** so I got to see them watching me on television which was really

nuns' graveyard. There weren't many playing facilities: these were all in the Lodge compound.

I remember most of the staff there. In my group was Sister [redacted] Girl in Charge^{NL5} [redacted] also, and in the kitchen was [redacted] SR 155. The nuns' cooks were [redacted] NL 176 and Mrs [redacted] NL 177. In the scullery was [redacted] Mother [redacted] SR 211 was looking after St Joseph's babies' home. Across the other side of the compound from St Joseph's was the Bethlehem Nursery (looked after by [redacted]) and the school (run by principal [redacted]). I moved from the babies' home at three years of age, across to the other side, into Bethlehem Nursery. Joined on to this was the "Big House" (Nazareth Lodge itself). Looking after the laundry (behind the nursery and the Lodge kitchen) was [redacted] NL 178. At the front door was [redacted]. [redacted] looked after the Chapel and the nuns' clothes. All the nuns were very good: no beatings from them at all. Many a time, however, we got beaten by [redacted] and [redacted] - very, very wicked beatings, nip the arms clean out of you. [redacted] and [redacted] used a PVC type of bat, and smacked you very hard on the thighs, for absolutely nothing. They also had a stick, which they hid from the nuns. [redacted] went on to become a nun, but was rejected. I heard a rumour that she was sent to South Africa.

My group was called St Joseph's: [redacted] and [redacted] looked after this group. [redacted] and [redacted] looked after Our Lady's group - on the same landing as our group. Only St Joseph's slept in the attic.

Then there was another two groups, St Marian's and the Sacred Heart. The scenario in that Hell-home turns my stomach every time I think of it. All the crimes committed against me are horrific. In these modern times, it is difficult to imagine the circumstances in which many of them took place.

1 Q. -- but you did have difficulty with NL4 and NL5.

2 **A. Absolutely.**

3 Q. You describe here -- you say just halfway down -- if we
4 scroll up a little further so we get to:

5 "All the nuns ..."

6 "All the nuns were very good. No beatings from them
7 at all. Many a time, however, we got beaten by NL5 and
8 NL4, very, very wicked beatings. They would nip the
9 arms clean out of you."

10 You say:

11 "NL5 and NL4 used a PVC type of bat and smacked you
12 very hard on the thighs for absolutely nothing. They
13 also a stick, which they hid from the nuns."

14 You also mentioned to me one of them in particular
15 used to take you by the --

16 **A. The locks.**

17 Q. -- the cheeks or the locks of the hair.

18 **A. The locks.**

19 Q. Which person did that?

20 **A. NL5.**

21 Q. That was NL5 --

22 **A. NL5.**

23 Q. -- did that. Can you remember which of them did the
24 more hitting than the other?

25 **A. Well, that would have been even, you know, because you**

PRIVATE

5. There were two staff members [NL 4] and [NL 5] who were very tough. They were civilians employed to look after the boys. [NL 4] [NL 4] used to call me names, buck teeth and rabbit teeth. She would get the other boys to call me names too. She used to beat me all the time. It was an almost daily occurrence. She would beat me with rubber bats all over my body. She was wicked.
6. [NL 4] used to make you sleep with your head under the blankets to make sure you'd fall asleep quickly. She never stayed in the dormitory, she had her own room. She used to go round all the groups bullying the boys. She would hit them and call them names and she used to argue with the nuns and the other staff. She lived in the orphanage full time.
7. If you wet the bed, [NL 4] used to threaten that she would put you in the washing machine.
8. The nuns at Nazareth Lodge were all kind apart from [SR 34] she used to pull you up off the ground by the cheeks and it was extremely painful. [SR 149] [SR 150] [SR 47], they were all good. They never saw the staff hitting us. [NL 4] used to wait until the nuns went to say their prayers and then she would come into the groups. I had plenty of bruises on me. I would never have received any medical treatment as a result of these beatings as it involved bruising rather than open wounds.
9. We slept in dormitories and there were about fifteen or twenty in each dormitory. Each dormitory had a group name (St Marian's/Our Lady's/Sacred Hearts/St Joseph's). I was in St Marian's. [SR 149] was in charge of St Marian's and she was very good.
10. We had hard porridge in the morning and the food was bad in the home and we were always hungry.

He claims he had plenty of bruises on him but that he never received any medical treatment as a result of these beatings. He claimed I would make him sleep with his head under the blankets to make sure he would fall asleep quickly. I reject all of his allegations completely. I never had a rubber bat. I never used excessive force or was cruel to him as he alleged. It is quite possible I had to chastise him from time to time and although I do not recall it, it is quite possible I would have slapped him if he was unruly or was misbehaving.

17. His account to the Inquiry is inconsistent with his allegations made against me in his two statements to the police. In his first statement dated 5th March 1996, he has described me as like a trainee nun. I do not know where he got this description from as I never wore a nun's habit while carrying out my duties in Nazareth Lodge and I only wore civilian type clothes.

18. I was employed by the Sisters of Nazareth as an assistant House Mother and then was described as simply a House Mother. In his statement to the police he states I came into his dormitory when he was asleep and took him out to the shower room. He said I then told him to take off his pyjamas and that I would then touch his private parts and after this I would beat him with a rubber bat all over his back which left him bruised and very sore.

19. He said this type of abuse which was both sexual and physical was carried out on a regular basis from when he was about six years up until he left when he was eleven. He alleged he was abused sexually in this way about twice a week. However none of this is even mentioned in his statement to the Inquiry. This appears to be the most serious allegation he has made against me but yet it does not feature at all in his Inquiry statement. However what I recall is that HIA 16 defecated in his bed regularly at night. As I have already stated, it was normal practice for either myself or the nun to waken those children known to have a problem at nighttime.

20. Whilst the usual difficulty was that some children wet their beds at night, I specifically recall HIA 16 would have defecated in his bed. He might have been nine or ten years old when this happened and I recall he was difficult to deal with after this occurred. I would have to take him into the toilet and he would have refused to clean himself. I therefore would have had to wash around his bottom. For some reason he has chosen not to mention this in his statement to the police but instead has suggested I was sexually assaulting him for no particular reason. I am sure I was not the only staff member who would have had to wash in this way.

21. In his police statement he describes what he alleges is the last beating he got from me. He stated this was on a holiday in Ballyhorman, Co. Down during the last year he was in Nazareth Lodge. He was 11 at the time. He claims that one day, for absolutely no reason, when he was talking to NL 6 I came over and grabbed him by the throat and pushed his head against a pebble dashed wall which resulted in the back of his head being cut open. He claimed blood ran down his back. He then was ordered by me to go and get a bath tub of boiling hot water but when he returned, assisted by he claims he threw some of the boiling water over my leg and that I started screaming and ran off. The two individuals whom he claims were present, namely and have not come forward to corroborate his account.

PRIVATE

SR 52 was in charge. SR 52 was a lovely nun. There were some nice nuns and some wicked nuns.

6. NL 4 was the civilian member of staff in charge of our group. She was left in charge of us whenever the nuns were at prayers or in care meetings. She was a wicked one. I used to wet the bed sometimes and she would grab your face and rub your nose in the soiled sheets. She would beat me as well with her hands or with whatever object she had to hand. She took a stick to my hands. You didn't have to do anything wrong to be beaten by NL 4. She just constantly beat you for nothing. On one occasion, she stripped me and another girl to our pants and locked us in the dining room. It was freezing cold. She also forced us to wash in cold water. I still remember the smell of the Jeyes fluid from the bath. I saw other children getting beaten by NL 4.
7. Another staff member called NL 14 used to chase me and hit me. He did gardening and odd jobs around the Lodge. He was wicked. Other people said he touched children. NL 122 hit me as well – he was also a gardener/handyman. NL 5 was the staff member in charge of the little boys' group but I had nothing to do with her.
8. The food in the Lodge was really poor. I would call it slops. We got porridge but I wouldn't eat it, it made me sick. For dinner, we just got a tiny bit of meat and a bit of potato. If you didn't eat your dinner, you would be given it the next day. The cook was a lovely woman. It wasn't her fault the food was so bad; she was just doing her job. There were some lovely people in the Lodge.
9. I went to school in Harberton Park. It was alright. I could read a bit but my maths wasn't good. Before I went into the Lodge I had been going to St. Kevin's school on the .

PRIVATE

10. We used to play outside in the big field. There were swings and monkey bars and we loved getting out to play but we dreaded going back in. I had lots of friends in the Lodge.
11. We went to Mass every morning and on Sundays. I made my First Holy Communion in the home but there was no fuss at all. I just made it with all the other children and there were no family members invited.
12. We went to Christmas parties outside the home and we were given toys but when we got back to the Lodge they were taken off us by [REDACTED] NL 4 [REDACTED]. I don't remember ever having a special dinner at Christmas or anything. My birthday was never celebrated in the home. We went on holidays to Ballyhorgan during the summer and we were given more slops to eat there.
13. I don't recall ever seeing anyone inspecting the home or any senior nuns visiting. I don't believe I ever saw a doctor or a dentist while I was in the Lodge.
14. Whenever anyone came to visit me in the Lodge, there was always somebody present in the room during the visit. It would either be the nuns or [REDACTED] NL 4 [REDACTED]. [REDACTED] NL 4 [REDACTED] Someone from the Welfare used to come to visit me. I remember one social worker called Mr Young. My mother also visited me, as did my brothers who came up from Kircubbin to see me. Before these visits, the nuns and [REDACTED] NL 4 [REDACTED] would tell me not to be telling tales but you couldn't say anything anyway because they were sitting there the whole time. I felt like they were listening in. I didn't tell anyone about the abuse anyway because in those days nobody would have believed you. I just kept it all in. You daren't talk about it and even if you did, no one would believe you.
15. I remember Father Brendan Smyth coming to visit the home. He would bounce me up and down on his knee and say I was a good girl. He would give me a bag of sweets as well. Looking back now, I can see this was inappropriate but I didn't realise at the time as I was so young. Although I was never sexually assaulted by Father Brendan Smyth, as an adult I now know

PRIVATE

HIA REF: 21

Witness Name:

HIA 21

THE INQUIRY INTO HISTORICAL INSTITUTIONAL ABUSE 1922 TO 1995

WITNESS STATEMENT OF HIA 21

I, HIA 21 will say as follows:-

Personal details

1. I was born [REDACTED]

Nazareth Lodge, Belfast (6/2/57 - 25/8/68)

2. I was placed in Nazareth Lodge on 6th February 1957 [REDACTED] old. I would remain there until I reach the aged eleven years and I subsequently left Nazareth Sunday 25th August 1968.
3. From the age of six years old I suffered systematic physical and psychological abuse by lay staff member NL 4 [REDACTED]. These abuses continue for the next five years. I lived in total fear of her; she dominated my existence. In later years I would find-out she was an ex-novice of the Nazareth Order.
4. The physical abuse consisted of her punching and kicking me, in addition to being physical force fed. She degraded and humiliated me in front of other children. The home had a communal dining area which was divided into four eating units which reflected your group. In most cases stew was the main diet which I had a huge dislike for. I used to hide the stew in my trouser pockets and NL 4 [REDACTED] spotted the stain on my trousers and she asked me what I was doing. I told her I didn't like stew. Her response was to take the stew from my

HIA 21

PRIVATE

1

PRIVATE

pockets and got me in to the middle of the dining room where she held me down on my knees and pull my hair so that my mouth would open and she force the food in to my mouth. I was crying and terrified as the food went down my throat. She kicked and punched me and hence I swallowed the food. All the children in the room would have witness this. There were no Sisters present during this episode as was the same on many other occasions she abused children. The impact of force feeding would limit my in-take that I became fussy about food ever since.

5. During the summer holidays we used to go every year to Ballyhorman near Downpatrick which was our holiday home. This time of the year we always looked forward too. There were six holiday huts of which four was allocated to each group, St Joseph, Our Lady's, Sacred Hearts and the Marion's. We had communal four dormitories whereby each room had two bunk beds which contain four children. One night [REDACTED] NL 4 dragged me out of my bed by the hair and brought me into her single room. I suspect the reason behind this that we were messing around having pillow fights because we weren't tired. It was still day light when we were put to bed at 7pm.
6. [REDACTED] NL 4 obviously had a dislike for me for whatever reason and properly blamed me for the carry on, so I wasn't surprised when she picked me out. She summoned me into her room and pinned me against the bedroom wall and banged my head against the wall. She punched me in the stomach and she stamped on my bare feet which caused my big toe to bleed.
7. The torture lasted for about fifteen minutes. My body was shivering as I was only wearing swimming trunks. She escorted me back to my communal bedroom and got me to lie down on the cold stone floor between the bunk beds with blood from my toe still bleeding. She told me not to move. Sometime had past where upon she returned which seem like eternity and told me to get back into bed. I was cold and crying the other lads were fast asleep, I was petrified. The next morning I could hardly walk because of my injured toe. My bed sheet was stained with blood and this resulted in being beaten again by [REDACTED] NL 4. Because of this, and I was put into a cold shower. Having left the washing area [REDACTED] SR 172

PRIVATE

pockets and got me in to the middle of the dining room where she held me down on my knees and pull my hair so that my mouth would open and she force the food in to my mouth. I was crying and terrified as the food went down my throat. She kicked and punched me and hence I swallowed the food. All the children in the room would have witness this. There were no Sisters present during this episode as was the same on many other occasions she abused children. The impact of force feeding would limit my in-take that I became fussy about food ever since.

5. During the summer holidays we used to go every year to Ballyhorman near Downpatrick which was our holiday home. This time of the year we always looked forward too. There were six holiday huts of which four was allocated to each group, St Joseph, Our Lady's, Sacred Hearts and the Marion's. We had communal four dormitories whereby each room had two bunk beds which contain four children. One night **NL 4** dragged me out of my bed by the hair and brought me into her single room. I suspect the reason behind this that we were messing around having pillow fights because we weren't tired. It was still day light when we were put to bed at 7pm.
6. **NL 4** obviously had a dislike for me for whatever reason and properly blamed me for the carry on, so I wasn't surprised when she picked me out. She summoned me into her room and pinned me against the bedroom wall and banged my head against the wall. She punched me in the stomach and she stamped on my bare feet which caused my big toe to bleed.
7. The torture lasted for about fifteen minutes. My body was shivering as I was only wearing swimming trunks. She escorted me back to my communal bedroom and got me to lie down on the cold stone floor between the bunk beds with blood from my toe still bleeding. She told me not to move. Sometime had past where upon she returned which seem like eternity and told me to get back into bed. I was cold and crying the other lads were fast asleep, I was petrified. The next morning I could hardly walk because of my injured toe. My bed sheet was stained with blood and this resulted in being beaten again by **NL 4**. Because of this, and I was put into a cold shower. Having left the washing area **SR 172**

PRIVATE

saw me hoping along the narrow corridor and asked me what happened. Before I could say a thing, **NL 4** said 'oh he staved his toe against the wall'. **NL 4** made sure she was in control and she was always on hand to offer a plausible explanation. **SR 172** actually dressed the wound and told me to take it easy. I had to go to the local hospital where I received further treatment.

8. In Nazareth Lodge the boys were divided into four groups which were named and colour coded, each group contain some twenty boys. Original I was attached to Sacred Heart's under **SR 173** but for some unexplained reason I was transferred to the Marion's group were **NL 4** was attached too. This was my worst nightmare and for the remainder of my time until 25th August 1968, abuse was dish-out on a daily basis. One of these occasions having gone to bed, I attempted to commit suicide by jumping out from the toilet area window some two floors high. Other boys force me down; I was at my wits end. I just wanted to end this nightmare.
9. Sunday morning we all went to mass at 10am on the first floor. This is another example of **NL 4** abusing children. I witness a young boy called **NL 72** who was slightly older and who had learning difficulties. He was being subjected to a torrid of verbal abuse minutes after mass for apparently no other reason. **NL 4** pushed **NL 72** down the stairs and **SR 172** happened to be at the bottom ground floor when **NL 72** landed. She was taken aback and helped **NL 72** to his feet the child was crying. **NL 4** made excuses and said **NL 72** couldn't hold onto the banister and she had tried to catch him. Many of the boys who witness this were in total shock and full of fear; hence we couldn't report the incident. It was also felt the nuns might not believe us. Also any opportunity we did get a chance to talk to the nuns, seemly **NL 4** was always present. It was purely a fear factor.
10. **NL 4** was cunning and an opportunist, the nuns were always out of sight and this was when she was most devious. During recreational periods lay-staff would supervise the boys as the nuns were normally attending church prayers or going to meal times. This window of opportunity meant **NL 4** could be in total control and did what she pleased. You just knew someone was going to get it. Other lay-

PRIVATE

saw me hoping along the narrow corridor and asked me what happened. Before I could say a thing, **NL 4** said 'oh he staved his toe against the wall'. **NL 4** made sure she was in control and she was always on hand to offer a plausible explanation. **SR 172** actually dressed the wound and told me to take it easy. I had to go to the local hospital where I received further treatment.

8. In Nazareth Lodge the boys were divided into four groups which were named and colour coded, each group contain some twenty boys. Original I was attached to Sacred Heart's under **SR 173** but for some unexplained reason I was transferred to the Marion's group were **NL 4** was attached too. This was my worst nightmare and for the remainder of my time until 25th August 1968, abuse was dish-out on a daily basis. One of these occasions having gone to bed, I attempted to commit suicide by jumping out from the toilet area window some two floors high. Other boys force me down; I was at my wits end. I just wanted to end this nightmare.
9. Sunday morning we all went to mass at 10am on the first floor. This is another example of **NL 4** abusing children. I witness a young boy called **NL 72** who was slightly older and who had learning difficulties. He was being subjected to a torrid of verbal abuse minutes after mass for apparently no other reason. **NL 4** pushed **NL 72** down the stairs and **SR 172** happened to be at the bottom ground floor when **NL 72** landed. She was taken aback and helped **NL 72** to his feet the child was crying. **NL 4** made excuses and said **NL 72** couldn't hold onto the banister and she had tried to catch him. Many of the boys who witness this were in total shock and full of fear; hence we couldn't report the incident. It was also felt the nuns might not believe us. Also any opportunity we did get a chance to talk to the nuns, seemly **NL 4** was always present. It was purely a fear factor.
10. **NL 4** was cunning and an opportunist, the nuns were always out of sight and this was when she was most devious. During recreational periods lay-staff would supervise the boys as the nuns were normally attending church prayers or going to meal times. This window of opportunity meant **NL 4** could be in total control and did what she pleased. You just knew someone was going to get it. Other lay-

PRIVATE

14. Nazareth Lodge primary school was within the lodge grounds. The school had four class rooms and four teachers, Sisters, [SR 34] [SR 47] [SR 156] and lay-teacher [NL 63], all were good teachers. [NL 63] was strict and he would have used a leather strap. [SR 34] was much the same, she had a short fuse. Regretfully we never got any home-work and whether that was a deliberated or a miss sight, most certainly left us at a huge disadvantage. This affectively affected our ability to grasp school curriculum which in effect left us exposed and vulnerable. In later years this aspect would be so crucial when having to seek employment. More often than not we failed just filling in application forms and that was very telling.
15. The backdrop to this, that I don't recall seeing any school inspectors visiting the school, there may have been. However I do remember the late Cardinal William Conway came to visit the Lodge sometime in 1960's but I suspect that was purely a pastoral visit.
16. Saturday 24th August 1968 my last full day in Nazareth Lodge, I told [NL 4] 'thank god we are escaping from you' or something to that effect. She once again beat me by punching with her fist on my back, slapped me on the face and kicked out. She most certainly left her mark on me. I have always had trouble with my back since then. The lodge was mainly happy environment with the exception of [NL 4]
17. Sunday 25th August 1968, was joyful but also a sad occasion. Leaving behind my home after eleven years left me in tears. While I had every reason to be bitter, the nuns for me were my parents whom I had a high regard for and the boys were my brothers. Thirteen boys along with I, were leaving for good and as we all said our goodbyes to the nuns at the front of the lodge porch doors, tears started to flow. We all climb onto the mini-bus which would take us to Rubane Home; it was an end of our time. Despite this sadness I was ever so glad to be getting away from [NL 4]. The other boys felt much the same such was the negative impact she caused.

4. The next one is dated 18th November 1975 and is signed by [REDACTED] of Nazareth Lodge and it states I worked for short periods as an assistant House Mother from July 1974 to September 1975. [REDACTED] then wrote a further reference for me which is dated 3rd May 1978 and refers to my work as a House Mother in Nazareth Lodge.

5. I am also enclosing two further references regarding my employment in South Africa. The first is dated 18th November 1980 from St. Angela's Ursuline Convent and the second is dated 1st December 1990 from City Deep Adult Education Centre. I also have a number of certificates for Child Care courses which I undertook in South Africa after 1975 as I preferred to work with young children, particularly those who were disadvantaged.

6. I would estimate that during the period between 1956 and 1975 I would have worked in Nazareth for less than half of this period and my best estimate is that if I totaled up all the periods I worked in Nazareth Lodge it would be between 7 and 9 years.

7. A number of allegations of child cruelty have been made against me. I was interviewed by the police about these allegations on 8th May 1996 and again on 19th October 2012. A number of people have also made statements to the HIA Inquiry. I deny I used excessive force or that I was cruel to any child. I also deny the sole allegation made by one former resident that I indecently assaulted him. Before I comment on the specific allegations, I intend to give some background information and describe the work I carried out at Nazareth Lodge.

8. Most of my work was with boys of primary school age, between the ages of 4 and 11. At some stage during the 1960s when I returned to Nazareth Lodge the decision had been taken to keep brothers and sisters together and so I would have had some limited contact with girls, but the majority of children I supervised and looked after were boys.

9. I was employed by the Sisters of Nazareth. They provided my board and keep and I received a very small wage. I normally stayed overnight in staff accommodation. Initially the staff members shared an attic room and sometime later proper staff quarters were provided. This was separate from the dormitories where the children slept.

10. I received no instructions or training during my work in Nazareth Lodge. I was given no information about any particular child. I worked under the direction of a nun who was in charge of each of the four groups of boys. I did not attend any meetings and no personal details about individual children were discussed with me. I did not meet social workers or get information from them when they called to visit children at the Home from time to time. I also received no guidance or instructions in relation to the discipline of children. When a child was unruly or misbehaved, I would have sometimes slapped them with my open hand. Normally I would have slapped them on their hands or their legs. On occasion I may have slapped them on their bottom. This was a spontaneous thing. I did not use excessive force or cause any bruises or marks on a child's body. I also used a ruler from time to time to slap a child but this would normally have been one or two slaps and again I never used excessive force. I did not carry the ruler around with me but would have picked it up if it was lying around. However more frequently I would have used my open hand to slap a child for misbehaviour.

1 **A. It was actually.**

2 Q. Can I just explore that a little bit with you, NL4? We
3 didn't really talk about this, because -- is that how
4 you saw your role was to keep these children in check,
5 to keep them in control?

6 **A. Just -- we were just to keep -- make sure that they**
7 **didn't get into any harm or mischief, and, for instance,**
8 **the Marion group was above the sick bay of the nuns, and**
9 **with the children's feet pounding on the ground and**
10 **that, the nun in charge of the sick bay would, "Keep**
11 **those children under control". So, you know, you**
12 **were --**

13 Q. You had to keep them quiet?

14 **A. Well, as quiet as possible, yes.**

15 Q. You told the police -- again I am not going to go to
16 this -- when you were first interviewed at 60584 -- the
17 police were reading you an extract from the Voluntary
18 Homes Regulations, the piece of law governing voluntary
19 homes, which said that punishment was only to be
20 administered by the person in charge of the home. Your
21 point to them was well, you just did it spontaneously.
22 For example, you gave the example to the police that if
23 a child was going wild in the dining room and not
24 sitting down and listening while they were waiting for
25 their meals, or they would maybe run across the table or

1 time in 1956. So she wouldn't have been supervising
2 you. Of course, you are not saying she was supervising
3 you.

4 **A. No.**

5 Q. You are saying she just happened to come across you in
6 the line that day.

7 **A. Yes.**

8 Q. But she says that -- she denies striking you in the face
9 or indeed any child in the face for any reason. So she
10 is simply saying, "That didn't happen. I didn't hit
11 you, HIA183". She said the allegation is false that's
12 made against her.

13 Now what do you say about the suggestion you weren't
14 hit -- if you were hit by somebody, it wasn't NL4 who
15 hit you?

16 **A. It certainly was NL4. I have a good memory. I remember**
17 **it. She had blond hair, fair hair at that particular**
18 **time, but I would have seen her the odd time manhandling**
19 **children, you know, but she wasn't suitable for the job.**
20 **That's my own honest opinion.**

21 Q. But you are clear --

22 **A. Oh, it was definitely NL4.**

23 Q. Obviously she takes a different view. The Inquiry will
24 hear from her in due course.

25 **A. Believe you me, it was NL4.**

64. The police also referred me to a statement from NL 273 in which he said he remembered DL 131 being hit by me with a brush or mop shaft. I deny this and if I used a large object like this on a boy, I believe he would have remembered it. himself does not describe me hitting him with a brush or mop shaft.

65. I worked with young children in South Africa between 1975 and 1991 when I returned to Belfast. I have had no further periods of employment at Nazareth Lodge. I completed a pre-school foundation course in June 1992 and also obtained employment in a day care scheme in Belfast. I refer to the documentation attached to this statement.

66. I generally have happy memories of my time working with children in Nazareth Lodge. The conditions were far from ideal, resources were limited and I had to work long hours for little remuneration but I saw it more as a vocation than simple employment. As I said to one of the former residents whom I met, they were hard times for everyone and in particular the children. I am disappointed that a number of former residents have made these allegations against me but I do not believe I used excessive force or was unnecessarily cruel to the children that I helped to supervise.

Statement of Truth

I believe that the facts stated in this witness statement are true.

Signed: _____

Dated: 11-01-2015

5. I was given responsibility for Bethlehem Nursery School and a group of sixteen children. At that time there were five family groups comprising altogether 69 children, 41 boys and 28 girls, with a Sister in charge of each group, assisted by two members of staff. Three of the groups were in the main building on the ground, second and third floors and the other two groups were in Bethlehem wing, a two storey building. Each unit was completely self-contained.
6. In 1975 there were four bedrooms in my unit, a large sitting room, study room, a dining room, kitchen, bathrooms, toilets and a store room. These were later divided into single and double bed-rooms. The older children would help with the washing up and tidying their rooms. We had a cleaner in each group who also did the laundry when the children were at school. Until 1977 boys over eleven went to the De La Salle Brothers in Kircubbin. After that families were kept together until they had completed their education.
7. My normal duties were those of a parent, getting the children up at 7.30 a.m., ensuring they washed, dressed and made their beds if they were old enough, serving breakfast before seeing them out to their various schools. A number attended Immaculata and St. Aloysius special schools. All the children had school dinners during term time.
8. Three of the Sisters in charge of the groups were also teaching. The Primary School was in the grounds and ages ranged from five to eleven plus. I worked in the two unit nursery school which catered for 58 under-fives who were resident in Nazareth Lodge, Nazareth House, St. Joseph's Babies' Home as well as from the parish. I had an assistant teacher and three nursery assistants on the staff.
9. I do not recall all of the staff I worked with in Nazareth Lodge but I have tried to provide a list of those I can remember to the Inquiry. I am aware of the name **NL 4** **NL 4** but I did not know her. She had left Nazareth Lodge before I arrived in 1975. I do not believe I ever met her and I do not know her personally. I believe **NL 5** worked with **SR 34**. I think she took care of a small group of younger children in the late 1970s. I also know she looked after **NL 5**. He was a boy who was found in a hen house and needed a lot of special personal care. I believe **NL 5** is still in contact with **NL 5**. When I was first in Bethlehem Nursery School in 1975 **NL 5** was one of the nursery assistants and was a gentle efficient lady who was generous with her time. She was very good at settling the new children, especially those who were coming into the care of the Sisters.
10. In addition to my teaching duties I would assist the staff with supervising the homework every evening before the children went outdoors to play. We were fortunate that we had two large playing fields, a smaller field with play equipment as well as a hall for recreational purposes. The boys spent considerable time playing football. All of the children went swimming at week-ends. There was

12. Despite my age I have no difficulty with my memory although I have a problem remembering the exact year something may have happened.
13. My memories are that we all worked hard to raise the children to have good morals and manners and I was strict about that – without ever feeling it necessary to hit a child. Corporal punishment was not used on me as a child and it was not something I thought was necessary. I loved the children and and considered it much more than a job as it was my whole life since I lived in.
14. I have read of complaints about the food as well as the allegations of abusive treatment and I can only say that we as staff had the same food as the children and I feel we did well on a limited budget and all were well fed and well nourished.
15. After years of having my bedroom in Foxes Lodge when it closed my bedroom was moved and I lived in the main Lodge where I worked for the remainder of my time until we all left in 1999 when it was closed.
16. When NL 28 [REDACTED] came to Nazareth in October 1956 he was the child in a notorious and infamous local case of abuse in the province as the story was that he had been kept in a chicken coup for his whole 7 years and was badly deformed from this and he could not speak but only make chicken sounds.
17. From the time NL 28 [REDACTED] came to Nazareth I was appointed as his carer and from then my time with the other children was much more limited as [REDACTED] required round the clock care. I still see [REDACTED] regularly – he is now living in care and is 62 years of age – and I consider that my calling to Nazareth was God's way of me meeting [REDACTED] who I love as if he is my own child to this day. No-one could manage [REDACTED] as he took to me from the start and nobody else could manage him.
18. He still telephones me – and even though he can't talk he understands me.
19. I have been asked to talk about [REDACTED] to the press or people writing books about his case in the past and have always refused.
20. Also at some point I came to care for NL 289 [REDACTED] who was deaf and mute. He was with us for while then left and came back again. I know that I took him on the train to Dublin at one time to another home there. He and [REDACTED] would have slept near me as they needed care and were often up during the night.
21. I will now comment on the specific allegations

[REDACTED] – HIA Ref 21

when he was in my group. He seemed to enjoy coming back and spending time in the kitchen with us.

74. He would also come at weekends and the weekend cook [REDACTED] was also very good to him. I recall that he even spent time at her home.
75. The accusations made by [REDACTED] are untrue. I never physically abused him as alleged or at all and I did not see him being abused by [REDACTED]
76. I did meet another boy NL 14 [REDACTED] and he told me that he'd met [REDACTED] [REDACTED] said he was disgusted with him. He told me [REDACTED] had said "Have you put your claim in yet" meaning about his time in care. [REDACTED] knows there was no ill treatment. I hope the Inquiry are going to hear from people like him also.
77. I note that he says our boys in [REDACTED] group and mine were called "the dainties" - this is true. I had heard this. This was because my group were always well dressed and well behaved. I was proud of my group and tried to instil in them a sense of moral character and to behave properly. I taught them manners and kept them clean. Not all the boys were as well behaved as my group. I achieved this through encouragement and praising the boys and making them feel a sense of self worth. I think scaring a child is terrible and I do not believe I instilled fear in my boys.
78. I deny that I made any child lie covered with a blanket as alleged. It did not happen. I have now been told that some of the boys allege that it was the older boys who bullied them and made them do this. If I had witnessed or been told of older boys bullying younger ones I would have told [REDACTED]
79. All of the children went to bed early and whilst they may all complain now it was necessary for the orderly running of the home to have the children all fed and washed and in bed early as we all had an early start to the day.
80. I deny that the children I cared for were ever beaten with a stick. And I deny that either [REDACTED] or I walked around the dorm with a stick supervising the children. We had much work to do when the children went to bed and hadn't time to do the kind of patrolling suggested.
81. [REDACTED] would be a boy I would have found it hard to believe would lie about his treatment and his lies have hurt me deeply. Apart from this claim business I don't know why [REDACTED] would make this up.

[REDACTED] – HIA 225

98. I do not believe my age was the reason the Police declined to prosecute me if this is what [REDACTED] is intimating. I believe that they realised that in over 40 years of caring for hundreds of boys a few have suggested I was rough or have made more serious allegations but I have told the truth and none of those matters are true. I am aware that [REDACTED] concedes that she may have slapped a child or used a ruler but I have always and continue to deny that I ever did and if she did this then she didn't do it in my presence.

99. I hope that I am fit enough to attend the Inquiry and tell my side of the story. I have fond and cherished memories of my life at Nazareth and many happy children went through our hands and have become responsible and decent adults. The suggestion that I don't want to talk about my time in Nazareth as alleged by [REDACTED] is untrue. I just do not want to hear lies about things that either didn't happen or that I certainly did not witness.

63. I loved all the children in my care and I was strict about manners and morals but I deny that I never showed affection to the children in my care. I was affectionate with the children.
64. No children were allowed to come and go freely – we were responsible for their care. My group were no different.
65. I have already commented that all of the children went to bed early as we all had an early start – this was in the winter months - but again in the summer months we were not at Nazareth but in Ballyhornan.
66. I deny that I ever dressed a child inappropriately for the weather or intentionally had them play outside in the frost without proper warm clothes. I was strict about preventing chest infections and would have made sure my boys were warm and not out if it was too cold or damp.
67. I wanted the children to look well and not feel different at school from the outside children and not all staff were as particular as I was. I liked my boys to wear a shirt and tie to school.
68. My group were not called the Whippets. The story about the whippets arose in this way – there was a boy called [REDACTED] - a lovely boy and an Irish dancer – he made up a rhyme about my group “7 little whippets great and small and [REDACTED] [REDACTED] owned them all “ [REDACTED] was about 11 or 12 and he made that up himself since I had seven boys at the time.
69. I should say that none of these allegations against me by this boy have been raised before with me and I again deny that I ever struck this or any boy in my care.

[REDACTED] HIA 132

70. [REDACTED] in my group with [REDACTED]
71. I remember him as a good boy and easy to work with. He was the loveliest child.
72. I recall him and his his brother, two sisters and I believe an uncle and Grandmother arriving from Scotland. I think his sisters were in Nazareth House and that they did very well.
73. When he was older [REDACTED] worked as a salesman and he would come in each evening on his way home from work for a meal. I would have been in the kitchen when he called . He gave me no impression that he resented me for anything I had ever done

1 **A.** I would say it would have been near -- yes, there were
2 parlour, yes.

3 **Q.** I was asking you about bed wetting and whether that was
4 a difficulty for your group.

5 **A.** No, I hadn't really much difficulty. I used to get --
6 I did -- they went to bed early in the winter. You
7 know, went at quite a reasonable time around 6/7 o'clock
8 maybe, but a child being there all night, I would say it
9 is humiliating for a child. I wouldn't like a child to
10 lie in bed all night with wet pyjamas or a wet sheet.
11 I think that would be terrible. I think that's cruelty.
12 I would get them up before I went to bed, any child that
13 would like to go to the bathroom, and that's what I did,
14 because I thought it was the right thing to do.

15 **Q.** But you don't remember it being an issue in your group
16 at all?

17 **A.** I don't, no, not really.

18 **Q.** Just on that point, NL5, you said somewhere in your
19 statement that you worked long hours. You worked from
20 6 o'clock in the morning to 10 o'clock at night.

21 **A.** That was my own choice. That was my own choice. I just
22 liked working there. I never took hours off. I just
23 kept going. I helped around. I wasn't just in the one
24 place. The children were in the school all day.

25 I might go down to SR34 and do a wee bit -- make the tea

1 **for the nuns and for the teachers at break time.**

2 **Anything that would be done I would do it.**

3 Q. That brings me on really to ask about your relationships
4 with the nuns. You said at SNB-60830 that the Sisters
5 treated you like themselves.

6 A. **Just like themselves.**

7 Q. You were particularly close to SR34.

8 A. **Yes. We worked in the one group, you see, and she was**
9 **principal of the school too, and she was in charge of**
10 **the children, the whole children.**

11 Q. I was about to ask you about her being in charge of the
12 children.

13 A. **Yes.**

14 Q. What did that entail? I mean, she had your group --

15 A. **Well, she'd have been in charge of admitting the**
16 **children, discharging the children, the money end of it.**
17 **She is in charge of all that, keeping the books, the**
18 **children's records, and she would do all that.**

19 Q. Just about children's records, were there many records
20 kept?

21 A. **Oh, aye. The Sisters kept the records up in the**
22 **convent, yes.**

23 Q. This is the big books, the big registers?

24 A. **I think they are in the Good Shepherd Centre now as far**
25 **as I know since we closed. Somebody said that's where**

PRIVATE

Nazareth Lodge, Ravenhill Road, Belfast (22 April 1972 – 29 August 1974)

3. I was placed in care in Nazareth Lodge for two and a half years. I recall when I arrived there they stripped me down and threw whatever clothing of mine that they considered to be no good out and it felt like being stripped in a prison. I remember for the first few weeks wishing my grandmother would recover so that I could go home but one of the nuns told me she had passed away so I knew I had to stay in the Lodge and that I was then on my own in the world. I never got to attend her funeral.
4. There was a lovely living room and bedroom in the Lodge but we were never allowed to use them. We lived in an old oratory during the day which had a wooden floor and massive windows. The school boys had their dinner there during the day. The kitchen was also there and it was a very large cold place to live. We slept in a dormitory at night that was located close to the oratory and we were locked in until morning. There were nine or ten beds in our dormitory. We then were lined up before breakfast in the morning in a corridor in our underpants and we got dressed in the oratory where our clothes would be put out in front of us, folded up and set out by us from the night before. We got dressed in our uniforms and hung around until school started. **NL 5** was in charge of our group. She would leave to go and do another job before school started and we went down to school ourselves. The school was on the premises. I had gone to St Patrick's Primary School before going to school at Nazareth Lodge.
5. We were taught by nuns and by ordinary civilian teachers.
6. There was an awful routine in the home and we just did the same thing every day. We went to mass on Sundays and sometimes we went to mass in the evenings. We went to school, came in from school and got changed, played a bit until tea time and then there was the usual fight for food every night as we did not get much. **NL 5** would sometimes let us watch a little bit of television but we were put to bed very early.

PRIVATE

They both would have hit us with a stick for not doing as we were told. Sister **SR 34** was a very angry person.

4. I shared a dormitory with about twenty other boys. When we were going to bed at night **NL 5** forced us to line up and show her our underpants to see if they were clean or not and if they weren't clean we were beaten with a stick. We went to bed about 6pm every evening and we could hear the children from the other groups still out playing in the yard. We weren't allowed to go out because **NL 5** would not allow us. Our group were called the "dainties" as **NL 5** always had us washed and cleaned and didn't want us to get dirty. We were forced to lie in bed with the blanket and sheet over our heads. I could never understand why. We were sweating under those blankets and it must affect your breathing over the years. I have always had bad coughs and I suffer from asthma and I wonder whether that is why. If we didn't keep the blanket and sheet over our heads or we made any sound we were hit on the head with a stick by **SR 34** or **NL 5** who were walking around supervising us all. It never seemed right to me. It was cruel and it was scary. I was only about five or six.
5. **SR 34** also taught us at school, which was in the Lodge. When she asked a question in class we would put our hand up to answer it. The first time you put your hand up and answered a question correctly it was OK but if you put your hand up again to answer another question, regardless of whether you got it right or wrong, she would shout you down and tell you to put your hand down and stop showing off. You would be sent to the corner and told to face the wall until the end of the class. Also, if I got sums wrong **SR 34** would smack me on the face and then put me in the corner for the rest of the class. **SR 34** would also have pulled me up by the hair and pulled my cheeks. This happened on more than one occasion. It was so cruel and I felt it was a terrible upbringing.
6. There was another teacher, **NL 63**, who was very fond of the strap. He would hit me with the strap about four times per week. He taught History and English. He would pull you up by the hair if you got anything wrong. I did not

4. NL5 [REDACTED] has replied to the statements and allegations in a number of witness statements. Her reply can be summarized in the following terms:
 - a. She denies any and all alleged inappropriate and/or abusive behaviour;
 - b. She further denies witnessing any inappropriate and/or abusive behaviour.
5. It is submitted on her behalf that during the period of her employment at Nazareth Lodge [REDACTED] made a significant and positive contribution to the running of the home and the care of children.
6. She regarded herself as a person with high standards, a perfectionist, which was reflected in the manner in which she cared for the children for whom she had responsibility. She accepts that she was strict and always wanted to have her children immaculately turned out. Clearly she took her responsibilities very seriously.
7. Implicit if not explicit in her evidence is the fact that the home cared for many children and there was an air of normality in the home. Children were fed, went to school, washed, played and went to bed.
8. Her perception was that the children were happy, although she remarked that during the troubles the children received by the home seemed more 'troubled'.
9. Of particular import to her life's work in Nazareth Lodge was her care for NL 28 [REDACTED]. She also provided special care to NL 289 [REDACTED], a boy with hearing and speech disability. Clearly [REDACTED], a person without qualifications or training, was playing a specialist carer role in the 1950s and 1960s and later. That she was entrusted with the role and the fact that she

PRIVATE

Nazareth Lodge, Ravenhill Road, Belfast (22 April 1972 – 29 August 1974)

3. I was placed in care in Nazareth Lodge for two and a half years. I recall when I arrived there they stripped me down and threw whatever clothing of mine that they considered to be no good out and it felt like being stripped in a prison. I remember for the first few weeks wishing my grandmother would recover so that I could go home but one of the nuns told me she had passed away so I knew I had to stay in the Lodge and that I was then on my own in the world. I never got to attend her funeral.
4. There was a lovely living room and bedroom in the Lodge but we were never allowed to use them. We lived in an old oratory during the day which had a wooden floor and massive windows. The school boys had their dinner there during the day. The kitchen was also there and it was a very large cold place to live. We slept in a dormitory at night that was located close to the oratory and we were locked in until morning. There were nine or ten beds in our dormitory. We then were lined up before breakfast in the morning in a corridor in our underpants and we got dressed in the oratory where our clothes would be put out in front of us, folded up and set out by us from the night before. We got dressed in our uniforms and hung around until school started. **NL 5** was in charge of our group. She would leave to go and do another job before school started and we went down to school ourselves. The school was on the premises. I had gone to St Patrick's Primary School before going to school at Nazareth Lodge.
5. We were taught by nuns and by ordinary civilian teachers.
6. There was an awful routine in the home and we just did the same thing every day. We went to mass on Sundays and sometimes we went to mass in the evenings. We went to school, came in from school and got changed, played a bit until tea time and then there was the usual fight for food every night as we did not get much. **NL 5** would sometimes let us watch a little bit of television but we were put to bed very early.

1 nursery assistants there.

2 **A. She was, yes.**

3 Q. You describe her as a gentle, efficient lady who was
4 generous with her time. You say she was very good at
5 settling the new children, especially those who were
6 coming into the care of the Sisters.

7 **A. Yes.**

8 Q. You were saying she had been you thought with SR47 at
9 one point.

10 **A. She did. When I first went there, she had a group of**
11 **children. She worked with SR47 with the group of**
12 **children and then she came to the nursery school as**
13 **an assistant.**

14 Q. When she came to the nursery school as an assistant, her
15 group of children diminished.

16 **A. There were only seven in it and one family of three were**
17 **being fostered out. So she was left with just four and**
18 **they were divided up between the four groups.**

19 Q. Did she stay as a nursery assistant or did she come back
20 later to work --

21 **A. She was made redundant really, because they were cutting**
22 **back really. Belfast Education & Library Board were**
23 **cutting back and just leaving two nursery assistants,**
24 **and we weren't to have any more than 52 children then.**
25 **So we had to reduce our intake from 58 to 52 and --**

1 Q. So her services weren't needed in the nursery school,
2 but did she go back into the Lodge to help?

3 A. Oh, she was still in the Lodge, yes, but she did
4 reception work.

5 Q. Did -- apart from doing the reception work did she also
6 look after children at that stage, when she went back in
7 after being a nursery assistant?

8 A. No. I think the group had been disbanded at that stage.

9 Q. Well, we talked there, Sister, about the boys going to
10 Kircubbin and that occurred right up until 1977.

11 A. Yes.

12 Q. I asked you: "Did they have any preparation for going?"
13 Like SR208 said, there really wasn't any preparation for
14 their leaving Nazareth Lodge. Isn't that right?

15 A. I don't ever remember them being prepared other than
16 they knew when they were going. Some of them were
17 excited, because they were going, you know, to join
18 their brothers, but there were others then when it came
19 to the day, they went off in the minibus in tears.

20 Q. And you particularly remember in the summer of 1976 when
21 yourself and SR30 you said witnessed this and you did
22 something. Isn't that right?

23 A. We felt really they were much too young to be going off,
24 you know, to -- it was out in the country really, so far
25 away from their younger brothers and sisters, and so it

PRIVATE

again'. She did this to others as well. Nobody liked [NL 4] The next day you wouldn't wet your bed because you were so frightened. Anyone who wet the bed would be forced to stand in a line separate to everyone else. I recall that [NL 4] came up one week dressed as a nun. She wore the full nun uniform and carried rosary beads. Two weeks later she was dressed as normal, as a staff worker.

13. [NL 4] used to make us walk up a big long hall in the Lodge with cloths on our feet to shine the floor. I remember we used orange wax to shine it. We would chant '1, 2, 3, 4, take the marks off the floor'. For this to be done perfect all of the wax would have to be rubbed right into the floors and not leave a shoe print if you walked on it. Every time [NL 4] walked up she would say 'Oh hold on, I can see marks on that, go back down and start again'. Then she would start hitting you. She would slap you and hit you a dig in the face. There was about eight of us all in a line and she would have us all walking up and down shining the floor. I think some of the other children were tortured by [NL 4] she was a wicked one.
14. I feared [NL 4] and I didn't like living like that at all. Her job was to look after us. She never showed me any love or affection, she never taught me any family values or how to do things. I used to pull clumps of my hair out in Nazareth Lodge because of the stress of being in there and the fear of being abused.
15. I remember one boy, [NL 28] who loved the hens and one day the nuns just threw him in the hen hut and left him there. I don't know why they did this but they left him there for about a day.
16. [NL 5] was another civilian member of staff at the Lodge. She wasn't as bad as [NL 4] but she hit me too. She would ask you a question and if you couldn't read or write or you got the wrong number, she would hit you across the knuckles with the side of a wooden ruler. It was really sore; you would really have felt it.

Continuation of
Statement of:

Forename

Surname

Service
/ Staff# if
Police/Staff

A

A

N

N

N

N

N

N

Date:

Page

05

of

06

this was a punishment or anything it was just so that he could be near to the hens because he liked them. Nazareth hodge was a big building, I think it had three or four floors to it. I was on the second or middle floor and my dormitory was called the 'Sacred Hearts'. Some of the other groups were called 'Our lady's' and 'Marion's'. There were lifts in the building but only the nuns and the staff workers were allowed to use them, and also visitors. Us children were never allowed to use them, we had to use the stairs only. I never knew or met my mother or father. I was never even told that I had a sister. About 10 years ago I started to receive things through the post which were a bit strange. It was because of this post that I checked with The Good Shepherds Centre, Ormeau Road, Belfast. They confirmed to me that I did have a sister and asked me if I was interested in meeting her. I told them that I was interested and they sorted it out and I met up with her once. I find it hard to believe that I would never be told throughout my life that I had a sister. Due to the fact that I cannot read or write

Signature of Witness:

Signature witnessed by: (Appropriate Adult)

PRIVATE

David. Sister [SR 47] was in charge of my group. She was ok. Sister [SR 71] was a lovely nun; I think she was in charge of the Marion group.

5. Sister [SR 34] was in charge of St. Joseph's group and she was a bad one. She was the worst nun. If you did something wrong, she would take you by your sideburns, lift you up off the floor, drop you and then kick you. She was a big, hefty woman. She weighed about sixteen stone and we were only six or seven years old.
6. [NL 5] was a civilian staff member who worked alongside Sister [SR 34] in St. Joseph's group. At times she was alright, but other times she was a terror. She thought nothing of thumping you.
7. We slept in dormitories with about twenty to twenty-five boys in each dorm. An older boy called a charge hand was in charge of each dorm. The charge hand in my dormitory was called [REDACTED] but I cannot recall his first name. When you were younger you were bullied until you learned to stand up for yourself. You had to fight or you got bullied. Even when we were seven years old, we were fighting amongst ourselves.
8. On wet Saturdays we couldn't get out to play so the charge hands would pick younger boys to fight each other for their amusement. They would put you with someone who was a bit bigger. We could fight up to six or seven fights in one day until you were beaten or blood was drawn.
9. Day to day life in Nazareth Lodge wasn't too bad. We got up at about 7am and did our chores before we went down to breakfast. These chores involved cleaning our dormitory and making our beds. The food in the Lodge was bog standard, it was nothing special but if you didn't eat it you starved. There was plenty of food. It wasn't the best but we didn't go hungry. After breakfast we had more chores to do like cleaning the kitchen and the dining room.
10. I went to school onsite in Nazareth Lodge. The education was bog standard and when I left I couldn't read or write. I can't remember the names of any of the teachers in the school. We would often be punished in school. In the

PRIVATE

us and he saw her and he immediately felt guilty and threw me to the other side of the bed and I started crawling up into my bed. I was about seven or eight then. I remember he talked about my grandmother in an attempt to calm me as he was sexually interfering with me. I reported this incident to **SR 47** but she brushed it off and did not believe me.

11. **DL 280** and **DL 209** were brothers. I am not even sure which one of them did that to me but I think it was **DL 280**. I heard that one of them committed suicide about a year ago. I think he was sixty two and it was starting to come out. They were two bad boys.
12. **NL 5** was one of the civilian staff, she wasn't a nun. She is eighty four now but she was wicked herself was not nice to children. She used to hit us with the edge of wooden rulers and stuff like that on the knuckles and back of the hands for no reason. I think she lived in the building and was in St Joseph's group.
13. I remember an incident on a Saturday again when the boys had a pillow fight. **NL 5** came in and told certain boys including me to go to the dining room. I told her I had not been involved in the fight but she beat me badly with six here and six there with a wooden ruler just because I was awake when this was taking place. I was eight or nine at this time.
14. I met **NL 5** at a funeral about one and a half years ago. She told me she was eighty four then. She did not want to talk to me about the home. She just wanted to be left to pray alone.
15. The police told me they had spoken to her but I don't think they are pressing charges as she is in her eighties now.
16. There was a nun in the home, **SR 34** who was very wicked. She is dead now but I used to be so scared of her. She used to lift us up by the cheeks and ears from the floor and throw us up against the wall or on the floor in the classroom. She would get angry for no reason at all. She was a really wicked woman. She was in charge of St Joseph's. I remember my grandmother

PRIVATE

7. When anyone important or a visiting dignitary came to the home we were all shoved into the nice room and allowed to play with the new toys until they left and as soon as they had gone we would be moved back to the old room again. We only got to play with toys at the weekend and even then we would not be given the brand new toys but old half broken toys would be dumped in with us.
8. We were not allowed to come and go freely in the home. Boys in other groups could come and go when they wanted but **NL 5** did not allow us to do that within our group. Our group was more regimented than other groups.
9. I also remember bath time was a chore because you did not get privacy and were not allowed to bathe alone. There was always at least two of us in the bath and we always had to share the bath water, we even had to share a toothbrush between seven or eight of us. It was disgusting but that is the way it was.
10. No-one in the home ever showed you any affection or took any interest in you. **NL 5** was vicious and brutal with the children. When it was coming in to Spring but still extremely cold outside she would put us in shorts and t-shirts and send us out in the frost. We would be freezing cold hanging around outside the school. In the summertime she would put us to bed at six o'clock every night even if the sun was blazing in the sky.
11. I used to have really bad chest infections and if I had coughed all night she would be raging the next day or she would hit me a smack on the head because my coughing had kept her awake. She had her own small room near to our living room and she stayed overnight in the home.
12. On one occasion she wanted us to set the table and because we did not know how to do it properly she lost her temper and stuck a fork in my arm. She was really vicious and had a nasty bad temper. I never received any medical treatment following this incident.

PRIVATE

13. The food was terrible in the home and everything was dripping in fat. I recall always being hungry during my time in the home.
14. We were always dressed the same which always made me feel ridiculous. Other groups called us the "whippets" because we whipped around all the time and did everything **NL 5** told us to do. There was no such thing as love shown by her, she was just brutal all the time. In fact she actually left the home at one stage and another friend of hers took over and she was even more brutal. I can no longer recall her name. She was also wicked and had no patience. If you could not do something or you did not do it to her satisfaction she would fly into a rage and punch you with her fists. **NL 5** **NL 5** would also have struck you with her hand or anything she had in her hand at the time.
15. There was always a nun in overall charge of a group and **SR 34** was in charge of our group. She told everyone what to do and kept an eye on everyone. I recall one occasion when I had rolled up newspaper and was kicking it around and broke a statue of St Patrick she whipped the hands off me with rulers. My hands were so badly swollen that I could not use them all day and I could not write for a week. An ex resident of the home had in fact died that day and **SR 34** used that as her excuse for being upset and for her behaviour towards me. The nuns were also brutal. They would turn around and smack you for no reason, they had their moments as well.
16. As I got older I realised that I would be sent to Rubane House, Kircubbin when I was eleven years old as that is what had happened to other boys who did not have families when they reached that age.

Rubane House, Kircubbin (1 September 1974 – 23 May 1979)

17. Rubane House was a law unto itself, it really should not have been a home for orphans as it had young offenders there as residents. On my first day there were two boys called **DL 60** and **DL 402** who were asked to help me

PRIVATE

3. **SR 34** was also the principal of the primary school in Nazareth Lodge. She was good to me most of the time and took me under her wing in a way. She put me in charge of the tuck shop which was like a red flag to a bull as I started to steal the sweets. One day **SR 34** called me into a room and asked if I had stolen anything. I denied any theft and she said she would give me one more chance to tell the truth but I denied it and then she made me empty out the sweets from my pockets. She gave me a really bad beating that day because I had let her down. I ended up crawling under the table and she was grabbing me out from underneath the table. She lost it completely and she was kicking me with her feet and boots and hitting me with her hands. I was about seven or eight at the time and I felt really bad about this incident.
4. On another occasion I was supposed to be an altar boy when someone was visiting the home but I stayed outside and played football. When I eventually came in **NL 5** took me into a small room and gave me a serious beating which I remember to this day. She had slapped me before this incident but never with the same severity. She beat me with her hands and kicked me with her feet. I was about eight or nine years old at the time. I am still not great with authority even now.
5. On another occasion after school I was playing in the old school dining room. The school was part of the home. Although it was in a different building it was part of the same complex. The school was separate from the home but the dining facilities were in the home and the nuns bedrooms were in the same building, all on ground floor level. We were taking off the rubber ends that were used to keep chairs from scraping the floor and we started playing football with them, making noise and throwing them around. I cannot remember which one caught us but either **SR 34** or **NL 5** came in and grabbed me and took me into her bedroom and gave me another beating which lasted between five and ten minutes and which I considered to be a bit excessive. I no longer recall the nature of my injuries nor do I recall receiving any medical treatment following this incident.

PRIVATE

9. I could understand the nuns and the priests trying to protect themselves. I was described as a liar and an attention seeker. I just wanted somebody to believe me. I had no-one I could talk to apart from my mother.
10. My mother knew I was abused. She was ninety two when she died. I lived with her in later years and she always cried and apologised for putting me in care. She had no choice.
11. I could not talk to anyone about it because it was vile and disgusting. I still have no confidence and feel alienated from people and I don't mix well. I always was a loner but it is not something I am going to let ruin my life.
12. If you got presents when you were out of the home they would take them off you upon your return. **NL 5** worked there and she was really strict but her bark was worse than her bite. **NL 5** would have used a stick on you but she had no other way of controlling people and there were approximately seventy or eighty boys to be supervised. You got through it. I still see **NL 5** now. She ruled with a firm hand but she did not cause me any harm.
13. At Nazareth Lodge there was a group known as "the dainties". There was a sort of tier system in relation to those children that had families that visited the home. Certain parents were alcoholics and put their kids in the home for that reason but they might have been doctors or solicitors. Their children were put into the Dainties group because they had an influence from the outside world so they received preferential treatment. I belonged to this group. I was classed as an outsider. As my mother was a regular visitor I knew people on the outside so I think that is why I received better treatment at times.
14. I did not wet the bed but I knew boys that did and they were beaten for it. The nuns made you put your sheet over your head and they made you stand there. It was humiliating.
15. I still feel that I was lucky to have been brought up by them and it wasn't all bad. The staff were strict but fair. I am now fifty seven, I made my own life and I made my own mistakes and I am not blaming my past on what

PRIVATE

18. It would some years later, 1976 or 1977 I randomly met [REDACTED] NL 4 [REDACTED] not far were I was living in [REDACTED] I felt the urged to cross the street to challenge her and to ask her if she recognise who I was. Typically of her, she said she didn't know me, I said to her "I am the guy you battered for five solid years while I was in Nazareth Lodge, [REDACTED] HIA 21 [REDACTED] I further added you know every bone in my body, I hope you can lived with yourself' and then I just walk away. That was the last time I saw her. She was evil and a psychopath. I suspect she is still alive, if so she would be in her seventies now.
19. Another lay staff member in Nazareth Lodge, [REDACTED] NL 5 [REDACTED] who is into her eighties, contacted me, in respect to the Inquiry. I have over the years met her many times since I left the Lodge in 1968. On one of these occasions 30th January 2010 we met in the now Nazareth Caring Village where we held a memorial service for one of our boys who died through the troubles. Sometime later I drop in to her home when she told me she was worried about the inquiry. Upon that I told her that she had seen [REDACTED] NL 4 [REDACTED] abuse me and many of the others boys and she done absolutely nothing about it. She replied in saying she didn't witness the abuse either to me or to others. I told her I find this is inconceivable. I told her she was no angel in the Lodge and she was strict. She did slap us across the face and lifted us off the ground from our side burns. What's that all about I said to her?.
20. While I had some difficulties' in Nazareth Lodge, during my time there but equally I will always be indebted to the Nazareth Sisters who enriched my-life. The lodge was my family home. [REDACTED] NL 4 [REDACTED] influence undoubtedly impacted the lives of many boys in the negative aspect of Nazareth Lodge.
21. My experiences of Nazareth were of very good memories but sadly very much affected by [REDACTED] NL 4 [REDACTED]'s ongoing abuse, which had a physical and psychological impact.

1 during my time there, but equally I will always be
2 indebted to the Nazareth Sisters, who enriched my life.
3 The Lodge was my family home. NL4's influence
4 undoubtedly impacted the lives of many boys in the
5 negative aspect of Nazareth Lodge. My experiences of
6 Nazareth were of very good memories, but sadly very much
7 affected by NL4's ongoing abuse, which had a physical
8 and psychological impact."

9 Now in their response statement the Order have said,
10 HIA21, that they were pleased to read that your life had
11 been enriched by your time with the Sisters and that you
12 had very good memories of your time in the Lodge.

13 "However, we must offer HIA21 an unreserved and most
14 sincere apology for any treatment he received by any
15 staff member which fell below the acceptable standard."

16 **A. Christina, first of all, I accept the Order's apology,**
17 **however late it may be. I still accept it in the way**
18 **that it has been given. It's just disappointing that as**
19 **children, while the nuns certainly done their best, and**
20 **I know they did, the vast majority of them, and I could**
21 **name so many here, SR47, SR34, SR 71 , SR 156 , SR134,**
22 **SR 151 SR 62 -- SR 151 SR 62 -- they**
23 **are all different types of people, but the one primary**
24 **example was to look after children as best they could**
25 **under the circumstances and within the parameters that**

HIA Ref - NL5

Name NL5

Date

THE INQUIRY INTO HISTORICAL INSTITUTIONAL ABUSE 1922 TO 1995

Witness Statement of [REDACTED] – NL5

1. My full name is [REDACTED] and I was born in Belfast on the [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]. I have just recently celebrated my 88th birthday.
2. I have never married and have no children of my own although I consider all the children I have helped to raise over the years as my own. This is particularly true of NL 28 [REDACTED] about whose arrival to Nazareth and care I will describe more later.
3. I have read the Statements supplied to me from the Inquiry and have found this very hurtful and distressing and my health has been badly affected by the resurrection of untrue allegations of mistreatment against me. Some of these matters were the subject of Police investigations which I am reminded by the papers were in 1996 and again in 2012. Those times were also very stressful and I thought that all this was over then.
4. I should state at the outset that I never smacked or assaulted any child in my care. I deny all of these allegations and I will so far as possible respond to each of the statements below. I would also state that I never saw any abuse or excessive punishments of any child by any of the Sisters or by [REDACTED]. It has been described that I worked with [REDACTED] or was her “side-kick” and this is not true. We worked with separate groups and interacted only at meal or playtimes. I never considered corporal punishment of a child to be my responsibility but left that to the nuns and it always seemed reasonable and appropriate to me.

Personal History

PRIVATE

St Josephs Baby Home 1968-73

5. My memory of my time in the baby home is limited. I do recall sitting as a child looking at another child, he wore glasses, had a straight haircut, and was dressed only in a nappy. I just remember his nappy being full. This is one of the only memories I hold of my time there.

Nazareth Lodge 01/05/1973-16/03/1978

6. According to records I was moved up to Nazareth Lodge when I was about four or five years of age. I was under the care of [REDACTED] NL 5 she was like a mother figure to me and we still have regular contact today. [REDACTED] NL 5 was strict when she had to be. I don't recall a nun dealing with our group but I do remember [REDACTED] SR 46 was in charge of me at a later stage.
7. The other care staff and in particular [REDACTED] NL 19 were not as nice. She wore shoes with cork on the heels and her hair in a bandana. Every time I see somebody wearing either item I think of her. She would pull the children up from whatever they were doing in a rough and abrupt manner. I recall as a child I liked doing handstands and had my hands on the wall and my feet in the air. She came over and stuck her stiletto heel into my hand. I remember crying but I never got any treatment for it.
8. In the mornings she lined all the children up and looked at our nails. If our nails were not right she would slap us as hard as she could. I was so afraid of her.
9. I remember wetting the bed one time and being petrified of her. I rolled

PRIVATE

19. I remember as a child walking up to the chapel in Nazareth Lodge, I don't know why I was there or why I was on my own but I remember hearing voices in the chapel. It was dark and along the corridor the chapel was on the left hand side. I remember looking in and Smyth was there with a young coloured guy, the young guy was crying I could see the tears tripping down his face. I looked at him and I remember thinking to myself I know why you are crying because he was alone with Smyth. I didn't do anything I just walked on and to this day it is one of the foremost memories of my mind.
20. Time in the home was always governed by routine you had a set breakfast, set tea, school time and everything else in between. The staff were often the victims of attacks by the children and I remember **NL 5** being assaulted and thumped on the back of the head.
21. **NL 5** wasn't cruel unlike some of the other staff she as strict. When I reflect on my treatment in the home it wasn't as bad as some of the stories I have heard.
22. **NL 5** asked me one day would I like to be adopted. I did not know the meaning of the word but I skipped about outside with **[REDACTED]** saying I'm going to be adopted. We weren't allowed on the grass at the home in case we got cold and if we did venture onto it we had to explain ourselves to **NL 5**

Adoption 1979/80

23. I was adopted by **[REDACTED]** in and around 1979/80. It was strange a young Belfast boy going into a rural community. Inside the **[REDACTED]** home I was well protected but outside I was bullied beyond belief. At every opportunity I was beaten by the other children but I was afraid to

PRIVATE

St Josephs Baby Home 1968-73

5. My memory of my time in the baby home is limited. I do recall sitting as a child looking at another child, he wore glasses, had a straight haircut, and was dressed only in a nappy. I just remember his nappy being full. This is one of the only memories I hold of my time there.

Nazareth Lodge 01/05/1973-16/03/1978

6. According to records I was moved up to Nazareth Lodge when I was about four or five years of age. I was under the care of [REDACTED] NL 5 she was like a mother figure to me and we still have regular contact today. [REDACTED] NL 5 was strict when she had to be. I don't recall a nun dealing with our group but I do remember [REDACTED] SR 46 was in charge of me at a later stage.
7. The other care staff and in particular [REDACTED] NL 19 were not as nice. She wore shoes with cork on the heels and her hair in a bandana. Every time I see somebody wearing either item I think of her. She would pull the children up from whatever they were doing in a rough and abrupt manner. I recall as a child I liked doing handstands and had my hands on the wall and my feet in the air. She came over and stuck her stiletto heel into my hand. I remember crying but I never got any treatment for it.
8. In the mornings she lined all the children up and looked at our nails. If our nails were not right she would slap us as hard as she could. I was so afraid of her.
9. I remember wetting the bed one time and being petrified of her. I rolled

PRIVATE

They both would have hit us with a stick for not doing as we were told. Sister **SR 34** was a very angry person.

4. I shared a dormitory with about twenty other boys. When we were going to bed at night **NL 5** forced us to line up and show her our underpants to see if they were clean or not and if they weren't clean we were beaten with a stick. We went to bed about 6pm every evening and we could hear the children from the other groups still out playing in the yard. We weren't allowed to go out because **NL 5** would not allow us. Our group were called the "dainties" as **NL 5** always had us washed and cleaned and didn't want us to get dirty. We were forced to lie in bed with the blanket and sheet over our heads. I could never understand why. We were sweating under those blankets and it must affect your breathing over the years. I have always had bad coughs and I suffer from asthma and I wonder whether that is why. If we didn't keep the blanket and sheet over our heads or we made any sound we were hit on the head with a stick by **SR 34** or **NL 5** who were walking around supervising us all. It never seemed right to me. It was cruel and it was scary. I was only about five or six.
5. **SR 34** also taught us at school, which was in the Lodge. When she asked a question in class we would put our hand up to answer it. The first time you put your hand up and answered a question correctly it was OK but if you put your hand up again to answer another question, regardless of whether you got it right or wrong, she would shout you down and tell you to put your hand down and stop showing off. You would be sent to the corner and told to face the wall until the end of the class. Also, if I got sums wrong **SR 34** would smack me on the face and then put me in the corner for the rest of the class. **SR 34** would also have pulled me up by the hair and pulled my cheeks. This happened on more than one occasion. It was so cruel and I felt it was a terrible upbringing.
6. There was another teacher, **NL 63**, who was very fond of the strap. He would hit me with the strap about four times per week. He taught History and English. He would pull you up by the hair if you got anything wrong. I did not

1 you:

2 "... feel sick that [you] devoted your life to
3 raising these boys in their time of need, only many
4 decades later to be accused of being someone I am not.
5 I worked long hours on little or no salary to help raise
6 many dozens of boys to be decent young men and I was
7 proud of my role in doing that. I am saddened by that
8 any boy would feel that I was rough or violent and do
9 not accept that I was."

10 **A. I agree with that.**

11 Q. Well, this is what you have told us, NL5.

12 **A. Oh, yes, yes.**

13 Q. Is there -- does that fairly sum up how you feel about
14 the allegations that have been made against you?

15 **A. I just feel that I have been stabbed in the back after
16 all my hard work all my life. I thought I did a good
17 job, but I didn't realise these things would come up.
18 I can't understand it and I never will, never will
19 understand it, but anyway it's said and that's it.**

20 Q. Well, NL5, you'll be glad to know that after a very long
21 day there's nothing else that want to ask you, but the
22 Panel may have some questions for you.

23 **A. Yes.**

24 Q. But before I hand you over to them --

25 **A. Yes.**

1 only during the Troubles that the Lodge got a lot of
2 trouble. We got very, very -- I hadn't children then.
3 Thank God I hadn't, but they were very troublesome
4 children that came in during the Troubles and the
5 Sisters had an awful time and you could do nothing with
6 them, but ... I saw them on the roof one night pulling
7 all the slates off the roofs. Nobody could do anything
8 about it, but these were children that came from
9 troubled areas, but this was during the Troubles, but
10 before that we had lovely children, and to me I think
11 they all came from lovely backgrounds. They were --
12 they seemed to be lovely children. You could manage
13 them. They had manners. Yes, there's a few wee wild,
14 ones but -- not wild, you know, just boys, but they were
15 good children.

16 Q. Okay.

17 A. But they would do wee things maybe that they shouldn't
18 be doing or somewhere they shouldn't be, you know, but
19 that was it, but I couldn't say a thing, but I was very
20 happy in Nazareth Lodge and I spent -- I wouldn't have
21 spent forty years in it if I wasn't happy. I did my
22 best and I hope that I have done my best, and I thought
23 I did, and I thought I gave my life for them. I left
24 Nazareth Lodge that day. We locked the front door and
25 I thought, "Well, you've gone a good" -- I said to the

1 **Sisters, "Now we have nothing to worry about. We gave**
2 **all we could to the children and we looked after them**
3 **and we brought them up morally. We taught them**
4 **manners", and we thought we did a good job. We didn't**
5 **think things were going to be said about us like that,**
6 **because those things never, never happened --**

7 Q. Well, thank you --

8 A. -- and before God I can say that.

9 Q. NL5, thank you for that.

10 A. **Thank you.**

11 Q. As I say, I have nothing else I want to add, but the
12 Panel may have some questions for you.

13 A. **I would live Nazareth Lodge over again. Just that. I'd**
14 **go back again if I had to do it again. That's it.**

15 Q. Thank you.

16 A. **If I was able.**

17 CHAIRMAN: Well, NL5, it's been an extremely long day for
18 you. You have been giving evidence throughout the
19 public session and I know you spoke to Ms Smith for
20 a long time beforehand. So I am sure you will be very
21 relieved to hear --

22 A. **Very relieved. Thank you.**

23 Q. -- that we don't have any more questions for you. Thank
24 you very much for coming to speak to us and tell us
25 about your time there.

8. I note that this boy did not go the Police and that these allegations are being made against me for the first time.
9. I note his allegations are very generalised and and that this boy does not accuse me of striking him and it remains my position that I did not strike this or any boy. I also can say I never saw Bridget Hillman strike this or any boy. I believe corporal punishment may have been administered by the nuns in the school but I never saw this.
10. I am sorry if this boy was struck as he alleges but it was not something I did or was aware of others doing.
11. I am not surprised that this or other boys remember my name as I was the longest serving member of lay staff and whilst other boys have said the nuns were abusive I am pleased to note this boy does not say that.
12. I know that memory is subjective and selective and that my memories of my time in Nazareth are not going to be exactly the same as anyone else who was there but until this Inquiry I counted those years from 1956 until 1999 as the happiest of times.
13. I feel sick that I devoted my life to raising these boys in their time of need only many decades later to be accused of being someone I am not. I worked long hours on little or no salary to help raise many dozens of boys to be decent young men and I was proud of my role in doing that. I am saddened by that any boy would feel that I was rough or violent and do not accept that I was.

I believe that the facts stated in this my witness statement are true



Signed

8th Feb 2015

Dated

HIA Ref - NL5

Name NL5

Date

THE INQUIRY INTO HISTORICAL INSTITUTIONAL ABUSE 1922 TO 1995

Witness Statement of [REDACTED] – NL5

1. My full name is [REDACTED] and I was born in Belfast on the [REDACTED]
[REDACTED]. I have just recently celebrated my 88th birthday.
2. I have never married and have no children of my own although I consider all the children I have helped to raise over the years as my own. This is particularly true of NL 28 [REDACTED] about whose arrival to Nazareth and care I will describe more later.
3. I have read the Statements supplied to me from the Inquiry and have found this very hurtful and distressing and my health has been badly affected by the resurrection of untrue allegations of mistreatment against me. Some of these matters were the subject of Police investigations which I am reminded by the papers were in 1996 and again in 2012. Those times were also very stressful and I thought that all this was over then.
4. I should state at the outset that I never smacked or assaulted any child in my care. I deny all of these allegations and I will so far as possible respond to each of the statements below. I would also state that I never saw any abuse or excessive punishments of any child by any of the Sisters or by [REDACTED]. It has been described that I worked with Bridget or was her “side-kick” and this is not true. We worked with separate groups and interacted only at meal or playtimes. I never considered corporal punishment of a child to be my responsibility but left that to the nuns and it always seemed reasonable and appropriate to me.

Personal History

17. I know very little about the allegations against Fr Smyth and did not follow the story as I hardly knew him so I don't know why HIA 41 would say that he abused the children in my group. This did not happen. I have already said I remain in touch with the and think they would have mentioned this.

18. I attach a copy of a card I received from after we met up again and describing me as a "very kind lady" and "like a mum to us all." I would say this is much more representative of how all of the children I have met since my time in Nazareth have given me the impression they thought of me and it is most certainly not as the monster abuser that I have been alleged by others to be.

HIA 16

19. was not in my group as a boy and I would have seen very little of him at Nazareth except perhaps at play time or at meal times. I deny each and every allegation of abuse by

20. I know more about HIA 16 now than I did when he was a child. Apparently after his time in care he tried out to become a Brother and left. He then moved down South and when he got married went down from the Lodge to marry him.

21. When his marriage broke up he returned North to live with his sister and after an argument he killed her husband. We were all very sorry to hear about his troubles and I know visited him in prison.

22. I met HIA 16 once after he got out of jail. I was coming out of Woolworths in Ann Street so it is that long ago. I saw and recognised him and he greeted me. He was with a lady and we chatted – he was friendly and gave me no impression that he had had a horrible time at my hands. I told him to look after himself.

23. I was surprised then in 2012 when the police put the allegation to me that I had supposedly hit this boy in or about 1963. Not the extensive allegations he now makes about myself and

24. I have always denied ever striking any child and that remains my position. I also can honestly say I never saw strike this or any boy.

25. I will comment further on the oral evidence as outlined to me by my Solicitor as soon as possible.

I believe that the facts stated in this my witness statement are true

Signed

Dated

26th 1st 20 18

22. I have met [REDACTED] several times since he left Nazareth and I have spoken to him about his time there. He visits me quite often. He has told me I am a scapegoat and not to worry. I have been distressed to hear the things he said were done to him by [REDACTED] and when he said I must have seen these things I asked him how I could possibly have when I didn't even work alongside her – she had a different group of boys. I have been told that [REDACTED] resiled somewhat in his oral evidence from that of his written words when he characterised me as “no angel either” by admitting that this was an exaggeration but I want to emphasise again that I never hit any child.
23. [REDACTED] does say that I slapped children and lifted them by side burns – I deny this utterly. But this sounds to me like something that might in those days have been done in the schoolroom.
24. I have been invited to reunions of Nazareth Lodge and got a standing ovation from the gathering on the last occasion. For many many years I set up the room to celebrate the reunion and I look forward to seeing the boys now grown men. I do not feel that if I was a hated abuser of children they would have responded to me in this way.
25. I cannot imagine why [REDACTED] would think I witnessed abuse but I did not and I have told him this. I thought he accepted this as the truth when I told him.
26. I have also told [REDACTED] that I am very upset and distressed at all these lies and that if God spares me I want to come along and tell the Inquiry this myself. I spent this last Christmas under the Dr's care due to the increase in my blood pressure, which went up to 190, caused by reading the papers that the Inquiry passed to my Solicitor. Much of the material and many allegations I had never heard before and I deny any untoward conduct absolutely.
27. I am in contact with about 25 or more of the children who spent time in Nazareth and have fond memories of our time there. I hope the Inquiry will hear from some of these people too.

[REDACTED] – HIA 110

28. I can not say much about [REDACTED] – he was not in my group. I recall that he was a gentle child and perhaps a bit slow. I would only ever have seen him at mealtimes or in the playing fields.
29. [REDACTED] says that the food was not “up to much” and I can only repeat that we all ate the same food - staff, nuns and children alike.

were not placed with families and as they got older the prospect of a placement with a family was not easily done.

6. The introduction of smaller units with boys and girls of varying ages was started in a big to make the place more home like. Each group had their own dormitories, sitting rooms and dining rooms. In the year 1965/1966, this had happened but there was a communal dining hall which was used as the school canteen during school time. The hall was physically divided into four sections with a section allocated to each group who had their breakfast and supper there. The entire hall was used by the School for the midday meal when the supervision was undertaken by the canteen staff. The meal was provided by the Education Board. I do not know if there was payment but it was shared by children of professional families, others and the Lodge children.
7. The Sister and staff of each group were responsible for the general care and behaviour of their section for breakfast and supper. Being a communal room the Sister with overall responsibility for the children had a supervisory role. I can honestly say that I did not see any child beaten in that year. Sr Clare was headmistress of the School and could exercise control without any effort. The children themselves had been used to boundaries and discipline; they were easy to manage. There was a practice started by [REDACTED] of delicate children (our own house children) coming from school to the scullery of the hall for whisked egg, or egg flip as it was called, at morning break. There was a tin of malt which was also given. There were some motherly women in the kitchen, as I recall. As I was not involved in teaching, I was responsible for this which was a pleasant chore.
8. In regard to staffing, I can relate my experience of this in the year 1965 to 1966. As I have already stated, there were four units in the large House with a sister and staff in each one. Three of the Sisters taught in the school whilst I was with, what was called, the Marion Group. As I did not teach, I would have spent time in the dining hall (midday) and after school in the playing field and the recreation hall (distinct from the dining hall).
9. Two groups shared the second floor – the Marion Group and the Sacred Heart Group. The dormitories were side by side on the passage with the bathrooms on the opposite side of the passage. It was the practice for each Sister to replace the other for our supper meal and alternative evenings. In the same way, the two staff members were alternated. There was no conflict. I remember that the young girls employed had done a preliminary child care course (non-qualifying). In-service

bed. SR 47 [REDACTED] who would have slept at the end of the dormitory in an area that was cordoned off and heard me crying in the middle of the night with the pain and she came out to me, put ointment on me and comforted me. I believe Sister [REDACTED] spoke to the domestic worker involved in relation to this incident.

4. There would have been other incidents where I was beaten as well. I remember a NL5 [REDACTED] being rough with the kids and being violent. Also, [REDACTED] would have been cruel and violent to the children. I do not believe that the Nuns knew that the domestic workers were being violent to any of the children.
5. I have read the statements and the transcript of the evidence given by [REDACTED] and the allegations that he has made and in particular allegations he made against me. I knew [REDACTED] and had always got on well with him. [REDACTED] also mentions [REDACTED] who I knew, who was roughly the same age as me. I do not know why [REDACTED] is making these allegations. I was not given an opportunity to challenge this evidence or make representations before it was said at the Inquiry but would now make some points.
6. I have read the transcript of HIA 56 [REDACTED] evidence and I note on day 87 he mentions what he calls "charge boys". These boys he talks about being 16 or 17 years of age. HIA 56 [REDACTED] also makes allegations that, when I was 16 or 17 years of age, I am alleged to have abused him with [REDACTED] and we would have been 16 or 17 years of age. I can say that in my time at Nazareth Lodge that there were never boys of 16 or 17 years of age. I have never heard of these "charge boys". There would not have been people staying at Nazareth Lodge of 16 or 17 years of age. All staff working at Nazareth Lodge would have been females. I left Nazareth Lodge for Rubane in approximately 1965, when I would have been 10 or 11 years of age.
7. I have read the allegations that HIA 56 [REDACTED] has made in that boys would be made to take their trousers and underpants down and that a face flannel then would have been placed on their penis. I can say that I never witnessed anything like this ever happening at Nazareth Lodge and it would not have happened.
8. HIA 56 [REDACTED] makes an allegation in relation to abuse that took place by myself and DL 231 [REDACTED] in a hall with a stage in Nazareth Lodge. I remember the area that HIA 56 [REDACTED] is talking about. There was a hall with a stage and a TV sat [REDACTED]

PRIVATE

bed one night and I saw [REDACTED] rubbing his face in the mess. She made an example of him. [REDACTED] left the Lodge. Everyone was afraid of her and they cheered in the refectory when they saw her leave with her bags. However she returned about six months later dressed as a nun. I knew to stay out of her way in order to avoid being beaten. On one occasion she called my mother a 'tart' and said 'who does she think she is?' and punched me on the shoulder.

10. During the holidays we used to stay with families. When I was about eight or nine years old I went out at Christmas to a family who had a son about thirteen or fourteen years old. I had to share a bed with him. He tried to force me to have sex with him. I remember crying and screaming. He was hitting me as well as doing other things. I don't know name of the family.
11. I remember the food in the Lodge was basic. We ate things like vegetable roll, fried bread and powered potatoes which came in big sacks. There used to be a market in the city centre called 'Mays market' and the nuns would go down two or three times a week. At the end of the day people in the market would give the nuns food. They were getting the leftovers from the market. Buns were also donated every Sunday by Kennedy's Bakery. I remember being hungry all the time. Sometimes we went down to the playing fields at the back of the home. We picked a green leaf from the hedgerows called 'salix'. You could heat the leaf on the radiator and eat them. They were nice.
12. I think a lot of the clothes were donated to the home. Also the toys at Christmas were donated. After Christmas the toys were taken off us and the nuns told us that they were being sent to the babies in Africa who really needed them.
13. I never had any complaints about the nuns. The nuns were good and I have nothing bad to say about them. I was happy with them. They made sacrifices for us. I just suppose they didn't see what was going on. Even today I really miss them. I have missed them since I left Nazareth Lodge.

occasions the standard of the care provided to the children may not have reached an acceptable level. There are instances when a particular Sister may not have acted in an appropriate way or when the children were not protected as well as the Sisters would have wished.

15. One of the main elements which has to be accepted is that the Sisters' general policy of no physical punishment of children was not implemented. There are instances where children were the subject of a physical assault and this is not acceptable when the care of children is to be considered.
16. Unfortunately the passage of time means that many of the Sisters who may have been involved in the care have died and therefore cannot be approached to give their information. Others are ill and are also unable to assist because their memories are not what would be required to give responses to some of these allegations.
17. One of the Sisters has recalled an incident where she saw a child being 'rapped' on the head by a Sister. This Sister was using a bunch of keys in her hand when she struck the child. The incident was immediately reported to the Superior. The Sister cannot recall the identity of the Sister who had rapped the child on the head with keys nor can she recall what led to the child being dealt with in this way or what steps were subsequently taken by the Superior. She can, however, recall that she did report this incident immediately as she did not consider this to be an acceptable way to proceed.
18. On a number of occasions recently, and in the not too distant past, the police have asked to speak to a number of Sisters in light of some of the allegations which have been made. The police investigations were initially on a case by case basis but have now been co-ordinated under 'Operation Charwell'. On every occasion in which the police have asked to interview a Sister, arrangements have been made and the Sister has made herself available to be interviewed. The allegations in these individual cases are consistent with the general nature of the allegations made to this Inquiry.
19. What is accepted is that there were occasions when a Sister has let her frustrations overcome her self-control and has acted in an inappropriate manner. The exact circumstances why or when any of these incidents occurred cannot be dealt with in a very wide ranging way and will have to be looked at separately.
20. The Sisters themselves accept that the responsibilities they took on were taken on in a voluntary way and therefore they cannot, and do not, seek to use this as an explanation or excuse for any misconduct.
21. The Sisters had a long working day and dealt with a large number of children in each of their individual units. Many of the children themselves would have been from troubled backgrounds and had issues to deal with.

1 Q. -- and I think it's important for them to hear that from
2 you listening to what you say that has changed your
3 position.

4 **A. Yes.**

5 Q. And the last --

6 **A. Sorry, Geraldine. Not just my position, but the**
7 **Congregation's position. I am speaking on behalf of the**
8 **Congregation.**

9 Q. Thank you. That's really helpful.

10 The last thing you will be glad to hear from me is
11 -- it's just a matter of clarification. It was when you
12 were talking about the difference between personal vows
13 and professional obedience -- I know I am coming back to
14 this -- because in a way for me it is hard to
15 differentiate those. If there's a set of rules in my --
16 I suppose my view would be that as a nun you obey them
17 in a kind of ...

18 **A. Well, nuns are only human beings, you know. We are not**
19 **plaster saints or anything like that. We have plenty of**
20 **faults and failings, plenty, and so I would accept**
21 **Christine's argument that, yes, if you want to stretch**
22 **it that far, if Sisters hit children when they knew**
23 **there was a policy that they shouldn't have hit the**
24 **children, that's for their conscience.**

25 Q. I suppose that's for me it is not that there was

1 **A. Don't know.**

2 Q. The other matter was in 1974, Sister. Sorry. I was
3 just wondering if she didn't pass on -- if she did have
4 that information and she didn't pass it on, could you
5 explain why she might not have?

6 **A. Sorry. Who are we talking about now?**

7 Q. SR143. If SR143 in 1986 --

8 **A. SR143.**

9 Q. -- had been given the information that was later given
10 to the police and didn't pass that on, can you offer
11 an explanation as to why she might not have done so?

12 **A. Well, all I can say is, you know, we are family, and**
13 **maybe she was trying to protect Sister, but that's just**
14 **my summing up of it. I don't know why -- why she**
15 **wouldn't have, but she should have given that**
16 **information.**

17 Q. Even though by this time SR62 was no longer involved --

18 **A. Yes.**

19 Q. -- she was retired and no longer involved in childcare?

20 **A. Absolutely, yes.**

21 Q. Now the other matter just I was going on to was 1974.
22 That involved SR18 wanting to move a child, HIA62, from
23 Nazareth House to Derry.

24 **A. Uh-huh.**

25 Q. The social worker for the child didn't think that was

1 consistent, can you offer an explanation for the range
2 and number of allegation that the Inquiry has heard
3 about?

4 **A. Can I offer any ...? Well, I can't really, because what**
5 **the applicants have said is what they have said and**
6 **I can't add any further to that.**

7 **Q.** Well, finally, Sister, if there's anything that you
8 haven't said before now, this is probably your last
9 opportunity to do so on behalf of the Congregation
10 unless we have to call you back for some reason, but
11 I know you wouldn't welcome that, but if there is
12 anything else, then now is the opportunity to take it.

13 **A. I think on behalf of the Congregation -- and I know**
14 **I have said this morning already and I repeat it again**
15 **-- we do offer a sincere and profound apology to anyone**
16 **who suffered any kind of abuse in our care and that is**
17 **sincere. Not only do we offer an apology now at this**
18 **stage. I think we have to turn to these people who we**
19 **have hurt and ask -- humbly ask their forgiveness for**
20 **our trespasses, humbly ask their forgiveness for our**
21 **trespasses in the past.**

22 I would like to take this opportunity to thank
23 Judge Hart and Ms Doherty and Mr Lane for their untiring
24 quest for justice, and Christine and Joe and your team
25 for your guidance and support through the process, and

PRIVATE

Nazareth Lodge, Belfast (24/2/1948 – 21/12/1956)

2. I was admitted to Nazareth Lodge on 24th February 1948 when I was almost three years old. My life in Nazareth Lodge was bleak, harsh and cruel. The nuns were at best indifferent but more often were sadistic bullies who spoke with harsh loud voices in scornful, dismissive tones. They were quick to strike out and provided no reassurance or comfort to a small frightened child.
3. We slept in a large dormitory which had beds down the sides of the room and a row in the middle. There was a cubicle in the corner where the nun who was in charge of that dormitory slept.
4. I endured countless acts of physical violence and equally as traumatic, witnessed daily assaults as children were literally picked up by their ears and thrown to the ground, belted and kicked around. As a very small boy the terror of their shouting and name calling was terrifying. We were all called 'sons of whores', a term I never understood except that it was obviously bad and meant we were all very bad children. The verbal abuse from the nuns has stayed with me and I have never been able to forget how it made me feel as a young child.
5. I cried myself to sleep so often, in beds that were never warm enough with inadequate blankets, leaving me with freezing feet and never any sense of comfort or security.
6. As an adult I suffer from profound hearing loss. I am totally deaf in one ear and have only slight hearing in the other only assisted by a hearing aid that costs me approximately \$5000 AUD to replace every five years. My audiologist is clear this is the result of trauma from constant beatings to my head and ears as a child. Particularly when the nuns would 'box my ears' – slapping me hard with open palms across both ears, that forced air and pressure into my ears leading to permanent damage. The pain was excruciating and I would be nauseous and lose balance when they did that. They did it often. They crept up behind me if I was talking or something and they would say 'take that HIA 307'. By the time I left Nazareth Lodge in 1956 my hearing was severely impaired and it

HIA 307

PRIVATE

PRIVATE

called [REDACTED] NL 4 [REDACTED]. The lay workers were evil, even worse than the nuns. I remember [REDACTED] NL 4 [REDACTED] and another lay worker would come round our dormitories at night time and if you weren't sleeping they would take you out to a big washroom where they would make you sit until you were tired and then you would go back to bed. I would pretend to sleep when they walk around the dormitory so I wouldn't be sent to the washroom. I remember one night when I had a bad cough [REDACTED] NL 5 [REDACTED] came in and slapped me across the face and made me cough into the pillow.

4. The main nun was [REDACTED] SR 34 [REDACTED]. She was in charge of the St. Joseph's group but she took it upon herself to be in charge of everything. She was the worst nun. She was an evil bully. I remember [REDACTED] SR 34 [REDACTED] taking us for communion practice in the chapel. We were at the altar rail. She told me I wasn't opening my mouth wide enough and she hit me so hard across the face that I landed in the aisle. I could never understand how she could do that in a chapel which was a sacred place. I was an altar boy and I knew that if I did anything wrong she would hit me. She used any excuse to beat me. If you did anything wrong, no matter how trivial, she would give you a time to be in the dining room. You were lined up and had to wait your turn to be hit. She would hit us with a strap. She also called the boys derogatory names. She called me "button mouth".
5. I got used to the beatings but the comments that the nuns made about my grandparents always upset me more. I had maternal grandparents who were still alive and they came to visit us every Sunday. My grandfather was blind and my grandmother had to take him everywhere. They would always bring us something like apples or oranges. The nuns, particularly [REDACTED] SR 34 [REDACTED], would call them names for being poor and they would take whatever my grandparents brought away from us. I think they threw it in the bin. When my grandparents visited, the nuns, particularly [REDACTED] SR 34 [REDACTED], would make them feel unwelcome and accuse them of making a mess of the room they were in. They were so rude to my grandparents that I almost didn't want them to visit. The worst part was the decisions that were made without considering them. There was a man and

PRIVATE

5. There were two staff members [NL 4] and [NL 5] who were very tough. They were civilians employed to look after the boys. [NL 4] [NL 4] used to call me names, buck teeth and rabbit teeth. She would get the other boys to call me names too. She used to beat me all the time. It was an almost daily occurrence. She would beat me with rubber bats all over my body. She was wicked.
6. [NL 4] used to make you sleep with your head under the blankets to make sure you'd fall asleep quickly. She never stayed in the dormitory, she had her own room. She used to go round all the groups bullying the boys. She would hit them and call them names and she used to argue with the nuns and the other staff. She lived in the orphanage full time.
7. If you wet the bed, [NL 4] used to threaten that she would put you in the washing machine.
8. The nuns at Nazareth Lodge were all kind apart from [SR 34] she used to pull you up off the ground by the cheeks and it was extremely painful. [SR 149] [SR 150] [SR 47], they were all good. They never saw the staff hitting us. [NL 4] used to wait until the nuns went to say their prayers and then she would come into the groups. I had plenty of bruises on me. I would never have received any medical treatment as a result of these beatings as it involved bruising rather than open wounds.
9. We slept in dormitories and there were about fifteen or twenty in each dormitory. Each dormitory had a group name (St Marian's/Our Lady's/Sacred Hearts/St Joseph's). I was in St Marian's. [SR 149] was in charge of St Marian's and she was very good.
10. We had hard porridge in the morning and the food was bad in the home and we were always hungry.

PRIVATE

has caused me enormous grief as well as communication and employment problems resulting in financial hardship my entire life.

7. A particularly bleak and miserable experience in Nazareth Lodge occurred when I was about seven or eight years old. I think I had measles, mumps or chicken pox and I was left alone in isolation for days. I never saw a doctor and apart from food being brought in and left for me, nobody spoke to me or gave me any care or comfort. I felt profound despair, fear and loneliness. I still feel haunted by that period. One day I was playing on the merry-go-round at Nazareth Lodge when one of the wood swings which was broken swung into my face and cut me just below my right eye. I still have a scar to this day. I never saw a doctor or nurse whilst in the Lodge.
8. One of the most painful punishments dished out by the nuns was the beating of my fingertips with a wooden ruler. The nuns would grab my hand and squeeze the fingers all bunched up together until they went red and then strike them across the fingertips with a ruler. The pain was terrible and it was done with viciousness especially in winter when our hands were so cold, so they could inflict the greatest pain and generate fear.
9. **SR 34** was the most terrifying nun at Nazareth Lodge. She was an aggressive bully and she was the biggest nun. She was always yelling at the children and punching us with closed fists. She also boxed our ears. She had a nasty, angry face and seeing her coming up the corridor made you shrink back against the wall to try and not be noticed. **SR 152** seemed kinder but she was upstairs with the big boys and I didn't see her very much. She was more of a friend to us and taught us how to play rounders. She appeared to be more modern than the other nuns and maybe she knew that the way we were being treated was not right.
10. During one particular incident **SR 71** belted me with her fists and for weeks afterwards slapped me about and shouted at me every time she saw me. In the Lodge we all watched a Paul Robeson film about slavery. One day some visitors came in to Nazareth Lodge while two others and I were on our hands

PRIVATE

14. One of the cruellest things done to me at Nazareth Lodge was to deprive me of visits from [REDACTED] my foster mother who had looked after me until I was three. She used to visit me once a month. I remember her coming one day and being so angry because I looked scrawny and underfed. I think I also had impetigo. She complained to the Reverend Mother that I wasn't being kept clean and properly looked after. After that [REDACTED] disappeared and I never saw her again. Fifty years later I learned from [REDACTED] another boy who had also been cared for by [REDACTED] that she was told I had gone to a good family and I wasn't in the home anymore. That lady was the one person in my life that ever gave me any affection and I still feel her loss today. I have no doubt that the nuns lied to her because she was critical of their neglect and low standards of care. The nuns took from me the one important emotional attachment I ever had in order to protect themselves from criticism. If that relationship had been allowed to continue I think my life would be quite different.
15. The selfish and cruel act of taking [REDACTED] away from me has been made worse by the Sisters of Nazareth's poor record keeping. This has deprived me of vital information which I needed to trace my family. At sixty eight years of age I have never seen my mother's photo and I have no idea whether I have any living family anywhere in the world. I have been searching for my mother for more than thirty years and all the Sisters of Nazareth can give me is sacramental information about my first Holy Communion and Confirmation. They have given me no information about who I really am and what happened to my mother. I have little confidence in those lying women. To this day I don't know whether they are simply refusing to give me my records or whether they actually exist.
16. I had a good voice for singing and the nuns in Nazareth Lodge encouraged my talent. I was always the lead in plays and I remember reciting poetry in City Hall. They nurtured my ability and I enjoyed it. Singing in a group gave me a sense of belonging and was one of the few good things about the Lodge. I know now that the nuns had many fundraising events and that I was being used for their own ends.

1 Q. You then talk in paragraph 4, if we can go back to 606,
2 HIA247, about bedwetting. You say that it was your
3 brother NL 64 , who was your younger brother, who got
4 beaten for wetting the bed. You yourself didn't wet the
5 bed and weren't punished for that, but your brother
6 NL 64 was.

7 **A. That's correct.**

8 Q. You had to stand and watch. So was he in the same group
9 as you?

10 **A. He was in the same dormitory as me, yes.**

11 Q. Same dormitory as you.

12 **A. Yes.**

13 Q. So you witnessed him being punished for wetting the bed.

14 **A. Yes.**

15 Q. I was saying to you earlier that the Inquiry has now
16 heard evidence that as early as 1927 the Sisters had
17 been told by the Ministry that punishing for bedwetting
18 was counter-productive and it should stop. How
19 regularly did you see punishment being used for
20 bedwetting?

21 **A. It was a regular occurrence. For bedwetting you would
22 get punished.**

23 Q. So it wasn't just your brother NL 64 that this related
24 to?

25 **A. No. Any of the children that bedwetted, they got**

1 **punished for bedwetting.**

2 Q. You explain in paragraph 20 of your statement, if we can
3 go through, please, to 609, that -- if we just scroll
4 down a little, please -- that your brother -- you felt
5 life was harder for him. He was a little younger and
6 you say he was treated badly as a result of his
7 bedwetting. His life has not been as positive as yours.
8 You say to the Inquiry that the hardest thing for you
9 through your time in care was to witness the nuns in
10 Nazareth Lodge being physically abusive to him and the
11 fact you felt powerless to help him.

12 **A. That is correct, yes.**

13 Q. One of the records that's now available to the Inquiry
14 as a result of the Health & Social Care Board finding
15 further material relating to you and your family does
16 speak of that just a little. If we can turn, please, to
17 SNB-44829, and just to put this record -- if we can
18 scroll down, please, so we can see those of 20th and
19 21st, to put this in context, HIA247, you had by this
20 point moved to Kircubbin. You had gone in August of '59
21 and your brother **NL 64** had been fostered out with
22 a family, a and , and again
23 no names should be used beyond the Inquiry chamber, and
24 subsequent to this the foster placement did not work for
25 **NL 64** and he goes back into Nazareth Lodge, but during

1 this period you can see on 21st April it is being
2 reported to the Welfare Officer that **NL 64** is having
3 a problem again wetting the bed, having nightmares at
4 night and wakes up pleading for someone to stop hitting
5 him.

6 **A. Yes.**

7 Q. For you that's consistent with him --

8 **A. Sorry. I will put my other glasses on. Sorry.**

9 Q. Are you all right? For you that's consistent with what
10 you recall happening to him in Nazareth Lodge.

11 **A. That's correct, yes.**

12 Q. But at the same time -- that's a very bad memory you
13 have relating to your brother and how he was treated,
14 and yet in your statement, if we go back to paragraph 4
15 of your statement on 606, please, there are some
16 positive memories that you have of your time in the
17 Lodge.

18 One of those, if we just scroll up a little, please,
19 was the sports activities, and you have a particular
20 positive memory of your -- I think he was your maths
21 teacher, **NL 65** , who was into sport, and because you
22 were into sport, that was you able to engage in Gaelic
23 and soccer and that was a very positive thing for you.

24 **A. That is correct, yes.**

25 Q. I think you said to me you got the opportunity to travel

PRIVATE

4. As a baby in Nazareth Lodge I remember very little but as I got older I was more aware of the things that were happening but I just took it in my stride. We just knew when we got up in the morning that we were going to be hit. One of my memories of Nazareth Lodge was that there was a lot of physical and mental abuse. The nuns told us that we would go to hell or that we would burn in hell because we didn't have a mummy or a daddy and that they did not want us. We were constantly told that nobody wanted us and that we were dirty. I was always terrified of dying. I remember crying one night, whilst out with my foster family, and telling my foster mother's sister that I didn't want to die because I didn't want to burn in hell.
5. I don't remember the whole daily routine. We got up in the morning and had to stand beside our bed. The nuns would walk around every morning and rub their hands up and down our bed sheets, under the covers, to check if they were wet. We got washed and had breakfast. We had to pray all the time. At night, we had to kneel and say our prayers at the bed.
6. On one occasion I remember wetting the bed. The nuns beat me and called me dirty. They made me get back into the bed and lie in it until somebody came and told me to get up. For the next week, when I was in bed, the nuns would tie my feet, at the ankles, to the bottom of the bed. It was an iron bed with poles and they used bits of rag to tie me to it. My feet would be freezing and the nuns would come back to check that I hadn't covered them over. One night I got up in the middle of the night to go to the toilet because I was so afraid of wetting the bed. I went into the toilet and could hear the nuns outside talking. I had to sit on top of the toilet for hours, with my feet up, waiting on the nuns to go away so that I could run and get back into bed. I would have been punished for being caught out of bed, and I would have been punished if I had have wet the bed, so I couldn't do anything right. Even now I'm petrified and have to go to the toilet before I go to bed.
7. At bath time, we were stripped and made to stand in a line. We had to walk up and down the wooden steps, and then we were put in a big tub. The nuns used scrubbers, like those used to scrub a floor, to bath us, and we all had to